

Forgotten Books

— www.forgottenbooks.com —

Copyright © 2016 FB &c Ltd.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, distributed, or transmitted in any form or by any means, including photocopying, recording, or other electronic or mechanical methods, without the prior written permission of the publisher, except in the case of brief quotations embodied in critical reviews and certain other noncommercial uses permitted by copyright law.

The Changeling: As it was Acted (with great Applause) at the Private house in Drury-Lane, and Salisbury Court.

Written by { Thomas Middleton,
and
William Rowley. } Gent.

Never Printed before. London, Printed for Humphrey Moseler, and are to be sold at his shop at the sign of the Princes-Arms in St Pauls Church-yard, 1653. 4to. In 1668 the unsold copies were reissued with a new title-page,—*The Changeling: As it was Acted (with great Applause) by the Servants of His Royal Highness the Duke of York, at the Theatre in Lincolns-Inn Fields, &c.*

Langbaine remarks that “the foundation of the Play may be found in Reynold[s]’s *God’s Revenge against Murther*. See the Story of Alsemero and Beatrice Joanna, Book I. Hist. 4.”—*Acc. of Engl. Dram. Poets*, p. 371. Reynolds prefixes to the story the following argument: “Beatrice Joanna, to marry Alsemero, causeth De Flores to murder Alfonso Piracquo, who was a suitor to her. Alsemero marries her, and finding De Flores and her in adultery, kills them both. Thomaso Piracquo challengeth Alsemero for his Brother’s death. Alsemero kills him treacherously in the field, and is beheaded for the same, and his body thrown into the Sea. At his Execution he confesseth that his wife and De Flores murdered Alfonso Piracquo: their bodies are taken up out of their graves, then burnt, and their Ashes thrown into the Air.” The dramatists do not follow the prose narrative closely; nor were they indebted to Reynolds for the underplot.

Book I. of *The Triumphs of God’s Revenge against . . . Murther* was first published in 1621.

A “Note of such playes as were acted at Court in 1623 and 1624,” in Sir Henry Herbert’s Office-book, gives the entry: “Upon the Sondag after, beinge the 4 of January 1623, by the Queen of Bohemias company, *The Changelinge*, the prince only being there. Att Whitehall.”—Malone’s *Shakespeare* (by Boswell), vol. iii. p. 227. Concerning later performances of *The Changeling*, see *Introduction*, p. lxi.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

VERMANDERO, governor of the castle of Alicant.

ALONZO DE PIRACQUO, } brothers.
TOMASO DE PIRACQUO, }

ALSEMERO.

JASPERINO, his friend.

ALIBIUS, a doctor, who undertakes the cure of fools and madmen.

LOLLIO, his man.

ANTONIO, a pretended changeling.

PEDRO, his friend.

FRANCISCUS, a counterfeit madman.

DE FLORES, an attendant on Vermandero.

Madmen.

Servants.

BEATRICE-JOANNA, daughter to Vermandero.

DIAPHANTA, her waiting-woman.

ISABELLA, wife to Alibius.

SCENE : ALICANT.

THE CHANGELING.



ACT I.

SCENE I.

A Street.

Enter ALSEMERO.

Als. 'Twas in the temple where I first beheld her,
And now again the same : what omen yet
Follows of that ? none but imaginary ;
Why should my hopes or fate be timorous ?
The place is holy, so is my intent :
I love her beauties to the holy purpose ;
And that, methinks, admits comparison
With man's first creation, the place blessed,
And is his right home back, if he achieve it.
The church hath first begun our interview,
And that's the place must join us into one ;
~~So~~ there's beginning and perfection too.

10

Enter JASPERINO.

Jas. O sir, are you here ? come, the wind's fair with you ;
You're like to have a swift and pleasant passage.

Als. Sure, you're deceiv'd, friend ; it is contrary,
In my best judgment.

Jas. What, for Malta? ¹
If you could buy a gale ² amongst the witches,
They could not serve you such a lucky pennyworth
As comes a' God's name.

Als. Even now I observ'd
The temple's vane to turn full in my face ; 20
I know it is against me.

Jas. Against you?
Then you know not where you are.

Als. Not well, indeed.

Jas. Are you not well, sir?

Als. Yes, Jasperino,

¹ " Yet his [Alsemero's] thoughts ran still on the wars, in which heroic and illustrious profession he conceived his chiefest delight and felicity ; and so taking order for his lands and affairs, he resolves to see Malta, that inexpugnable rampier of Mars, the glory of Christendom and the terror of Turkey, to see if he could gain any place of command and honour either in that Island or in their Gallies . . . And so building many castles in the air, he comes to Alicant, hoping to find passage there for Naples, and from thence to ship himself upon the Neapolitan Gallies for Malta . . . Coming one morning to Our Lady's Church at Mass and being on his knees in his devotion, he espies a young gentlewoman likewise on hers next to him, who being young, tender, and fair, he through her thin veil discovered all the perfections of a delicate and sweet beauty ; she espies him feasting on the dainties of her pure and fresh cheeks ; and tilting with the invisible lances of his eyes to hers, he is instantly ravished and vanquished with the pleasing object of this angelical countenance, and now he can no more resist either the power or passion of love."—Reynolds' *God's Revenge against Murder*, ed. 1635, pp. 46, 47.

² " It has been observed by Steevens in a note on *Macbeth*, act i. sc. 3, that the selling of winds was an usual practice amongst the witches."—Editor of 1816.

Unless there be some hidden malady
Within me, that I understand not.

Jas. And that
I begin to doubt, sir: I never knew
Your inclination to travel¹ at a pause,
With any cause to hinder it, till now.
Ashore you were wont to call your servants up,
And help to trap your horses for the speed; 30
At sea I've seen you weigh the anchor with 'em,
Hoist sails for fear to lose the foremost breath,
Be in continual prayers for fair winds;
And have you chang'd your orisons?

Als. No, friend;
I keep the same church, same devotion.

Jas. Lover I'm sure you're none; the stoic was
Found in you long ago; your mother nor
Best friends, who have set snares of beauty, ay,
And choice ones too, could never trap you that way:
What might be the cause?

Als. Lord, how violent 40
Thou art! I was but meditating of
Somewhat I heard within the temple.

Jas. Is this
Violence? 'tis but idleness compar'd
With your haste yesterday.

Als. I'm all this while
A-going, man.

Jas. Backwards, I think, sir. Look; your servants. 51

¹ Old ed. "inclinations to travels."

Enter Servants.

First Ser. The seamen call; shall we board your trunks?

Als. No, not to-day.

Jas. 'Tis the critical day, it seems, and the sign in Aquarius. 51

Sec. Ser. We must not to sea to-day; this smoke will bring forth fire.

Als. Keep all on shore; I do not know the end, Which needs I must do, of an affair in hand Ere I can go to sea.

First Ser. Well, your pleasure.

Sec. Ser. Let him e'en take his leisure too; we are safer on land. [Exit Servants. 59

Enter BEATRICE, DIAPHANTA, and Servants: ALSEMERO — accosts BEATRICE and then kissees her.

Jas. How now? the laws of the Medes are changed sure; salute a woman! he kisses too; wonderful! where learnt he this? and does it perfectly too; in my conscience, he ne'er rehearsed it before. Nay, go on; this will be stranger and better news at Valencia than if he had ransomed half Greece from the Turk. [Aside.

Beat. You are a scholar, sir?

Als. A weak one, lady.

Beat. Which of the sciences is this love you speak of?

Als. From your tongue I take it to be music.

Beat. You're skilful in it, can sing at first sight.

Als. And I have show'd you all my skill at once ; 70
I want more words to express me further,
And must be forc'd to repetition ;
I love you dearly.

Beat. Be better advis'd, sir :

Our eyes are sentinels unto our judgments,
And should give certain judgment what they see ;
But they are rash sometimes, and tell us wonders
Of common things, which when our judgments find,
They can then check the eyes, and call them blind.

Als. But I am further, lady ; yesterday
Was mine eyes' employment, and hither now 80
They brought my judgment, where are both agreed :
Both houses then consenting, 'tis agreed ;
Only there wants the confirmation
By the hand royal, that is your part, lady.

Beat. O,¹ there's one above me, sir.—For five days
past
To be recall'd ! sure mine eyes were mistaken ;
This was the man was meant me : that he should come
So near his time, and miss it ! [Aside.

Jas. We might have come by the carriers from
Valencia, I see, and saved all our sea-provision ; we are
at farthest sure : methinks I should do something too ;
I meant to be a venturer in this voyage : 92

¹ Dyce and the editor of 1816 read—

“ There's one above me, sir.—O, five days past.”

But the change is not necessary.

Yonder's another vessel, I'll board her ;
If she be lawful prize, down goes her topsail.

[*Accosts* DIAPHANTA.]

Enter DE FLORES.

De F. Lady, your father——

Beat. Is in health, I hope.

De F. Your eye shall instantly instruct you, lady ;
He's coming hitherward.

Beat. What needed then
Your duteous preface ? I had rather
He had come unexpected ; you must stale¹
A good presence with unnecessary blabbing ; 100
And how welcome for your part you are,
I'm sure you know.

De F. Will't never mend this scorn,
One side nor other ? must I be enjoin'd
To follow still whilst she flies from me ? well,
Fates, do your worst, I'll please myself with sight
Of her at all opportunities,
If but to spite her anger : I know she had
Rather see me dead than living ; and yet
She knows no cause for't but a peevish will. [*Aside.*]

Als. You seem'd displeasèd, lady, on the sudden. 110

Beat. Your pardon, sir, 'tis my infirmity ;
Nor can I other reason render you,

¹ So the editor of 1816 for the old copy's "stall." "Stale" = make flat, deprive of zest.

Than his or hers, of¹ some particular thing
 They must abandon as a deadly poison,
 Which to a thousand other tastes were wholesome ;
 Such to mine eyes is that same fellow there,
 The same that report speaks of the basilisk.

Als. This is a frequent frailty in our nature ;
 There's scarce a man amongst a thousand found
 But hath his imperfection : one distastes
 The scent of roses, which to infinites
 Most pleasing is and odoriferous ;
 One oil, the enemy of poison ;
 Another wine, the cheerer of the heart
 And lively refresher of the countenance :
 Indeed this fault, if so it be, is general ;
 There's scarce a thing but is both lov'd and loath'd :
 Myself, I must confess, have the same frailty.

120

Beat. And what may be your poison, sir? I'm bold
 with you.

Als. What² might be your desire, perhaps ; a cherry.

Beat. I am no enemy to any creature
 My memory has, but yon gentleman.

131

Als. He does ill to tempt your sight, if he knew it.

Beat. He cannot be ignorant of that, sir,
 I have not spar'd to tell him so ; and I want
 To help myself, since he's a gentleman
 In good respect with my father, and follows him.

Als. He's out of his place then now.

[*They talk apart.*]

¹ Old ed. "or."

² Old ed. "And what."

Jas. I am a mad wag, wench. 139

Dia. So methinks; but for your comfort, I can tell you, we have a doctor in the city that undertakes the cure of such.

Jas. Tush, I know what physic is best for the state of mine own body.

Dia. 'Tis scarce a well-governed state, I believe.

Jas. I could show thee such a thing with an ingredience¹ that we two would compound together, and if it did not tame the maddest blood i' th' town for two hours after, I'll ne'er profess physic again. 149

Dia. A little poppy, sir, were good to cause you sleep.

Jas. Poppy? I'll give thee a pop i' th' lips for that first, and begin there: poppy is one simple indeed, and cuckoo-what-you-call't another: I'll discover no more now; another time I'll show thee all. [*Exit.*]

Beat. My father, sir.

Enter VERMANDERO and Servants.

Ver. O Joanna, I came to meet thee;
Your devotion's ended?

Beat. For this time, sir.—
I shall change my saint, I fear me; I find
A giddy turning in me. [*Aside.*—Sir, this while
I am beholding to this gentleman, who
Left his own way to keep me company, 160

¹ Old ed. "ingredian." Cf. *A Chaste Maid, &c.*, v. 2, "The worst ingredience dissolv'd pearl and amber."

And in discourse I find him much desirous
To see your castle ;¹ he hath deserv'd it, sir,
If ye please to grant it.

Ver. With all my heart, sir :
Yet there's an article between, I must know
Your country ; we use not to give survey
Of our chief strengths to strangers ; our citadels
Are plac'd conspicuous to outward view,
On promonts'² tops, but within are secrets.

Alc. A Valencian, sir.

Ver. A Valencian ?

170

That's native, sir : of what name, I beseech you ?

Alc. Alsemero, sir.

Ver. Alsemero ? not the son
Of John de Alsemero ?

Alc. The same, sir.

Ver. My best love bids you welcome.

Beat. He was wont
To call me so, and then he speaks a most
Unfeign'd truth.

Ver. O sir, I knew your father ;
We two were in acquaintance long ago,
Before our chins were worth iulan³ down,
And so continu'd till the stamp of time
Had coin'd us into silver : well, he's gone ;
A good soldier went with him.

180

¹ " He [Vermandero] being Captain of the castle of that City [Ali-
cant]."—Reynold's *Triumph of God's Revenge against Murder*, p. 47,
ed. 1635.

² Promontories.

³ Old ed. "Julan."

Als. You went together in that, sir.

Ver. No, by Saint Jaques, I came behind him ;
Yet I've done somewhat too : an unhappy day
Swallowed him at last at Gibraltar,
In fight with those rebellious Hollanders ;
Was it not so ?

Als. Whose death I had reveng'd,¹
Or follow'd him in fate, had not the late league
Prevented me.

Ver. Ay, ay, 'twas time to breathe.—
O Joanna, I should ha' told thee news ;
I saw Piracquo lately.

190

Beat. That's ill news. [*Aside.*

Ver. He's hot preparing for this day of triumph :
Thou must be a bride within this sevensnight.

Als. Ha ! [*Aside.*

Beat. Nay, good sir, be not so violent ; with speed
I cannot render satisfaction
Unto the dear companion of my soul,
— Virginity, whom I thus long have liv'd with,

¹ " Boiling thus in the heat of his youthful blood, and contemplating often on the death of his father, he [Alsemero] resolves to go to Validolyd and to employ some Grando either to the King or the Duke of Lerma his great favourite, to procure him a Captain's place and a Company under the Arch-Duke Albertus, who at that time made bloody Wars against the Netherlands, thereby to draw them to obedience : But as he began this suit, a general truce of both sides laid aside Arms, which (by the mediation of England and France) was shortly followed by a peace, as a Mother by the Daughter ; which was concluded at the Hague by his Excellency of Nassaw and Marquess Spinola, being chief Commissioners of either party."—Reynold's *Triumphs of God's Revenge against Murder*, p. 46, ed. 1635.

And part with it so rude and suddenly ;
Can such friends divide, never to meet again,
Without a solemn farewell ?

Ver. Tush, tush ! there's a toy.¹

200

Alc. I must now part, and never meet again
With any joy on earth. [*Aside.*]—Sir, your pardon ;
My affairs call on me. ↵

Ver. How, sir ? by no means :
Not chang'd so soon, I hope ? you must see my castle,
And her best entertainment, ere we part,
I shall think myself unkindly usèd else.
Come, come, let's on ; I had good hope your stay
Had been a while with us in Aligant ;²
I might have bid you to my daughter's wedding.¹

Alc. He means to feast me, and poisons me before-
hand.— [*Aside.* 210

I should be dearly glad to be there, sir,
Did my occasions suit as I could wish.

Beat. I shall be sorry if you be not there
When it is done, sir ; but not so suddenly.

Ver. I tell you, sir, the gentleman's complete,
A courtier and a gallant, enrich'd
With many fair and noble ornaments ;
I would not change him for a son-in-law
For any he in Spain, the proudest he,
And we have great ones, that you know.

Alc. He's much
Bound to you, sir.

220

¹ Trifle.² Alicant.

Ver. He shall be bound to me
As fast as this tie can hold him ; I'll want
My will else.

Beat. I shall want mine, if you do it. [Aside.

Ver. But come, by the way I'll tell you more of him.

Als. How shall I dare to venture in his castle,
When he discharges murderers¹ at the gate?
But I must on, for back I cannot go. [Aside.

Beat. Not this serpent gone yet?

[Aside. Drops a glove.

Ver. Look, girl, thy glove's fallen.
Stay, stay ; De Flores, help a little.

[Exit VERMANDERO, ALSEMERO, and Servants.

De F. Here, lady. [Offers her the glove.

Beat. Mischief on your officious forwardness ; 230
Who bade you stoop? they touch my hand no more :
There ! for the other's sake I part with this ;

[Takes off and throws down the other glove.

Take 'em, and draw thine own skin off with 'em !

[Exit with DIAPHANTA and Servants.

De F. Here's a favour come with a mischief now ! I
know

She had rather wear my pelt² tann'd in a pair

4½ Of dancing pumps, than I should thrust my fingers

Into her sockets here : I know she hates me,

Yet cannot choose but love her : no matter :

If but to vex her, I will haunt her still ;

Though I get nothing else, I'll have my will. [Exit. 240

¹ Destructive pieces of ordnance ; otherwise called *murdering-pieces.*

² Skin.

SCENE II.

A Room in the House of ALIBIUS.

Enter ALIBIUS and LOLLIO.

Alib. Lollo, I must trust thee with a secret,
But thou must keep it.

Lol. I was ever close to a secret, sir.

Alib. The diligence that I have found in thee,
The care and industry already past,
Assures me of thy good continuance.
Lollo, I have a wife.

Lol. Fie, sir, 'tis too late to keep her secret; she's
known to be married all the town and country over.

Alib. Thou goest too fast, my Lollo; that knowledge
I allow no man can be barrèd it; 11
But there is a knowledge which is nearer,
Deeper, and sweeter, Lollo.

Lol. Well, sir, let us handle that between you and I.

Alib. 'Tis that I go about, man: Lollo,
My wife is young.

Lol. So much the worse to be kept secret, sir.

Alib. Why, now thou meet'st the substance of the
point;
I am old, Lollo.

Lol. No, sir, 'tis I am old Lollo. 20

Alib. Yet why may not these¹ concord and sympa-
thise?

¹ Old ed. "this."

Old trees and young plants often grow together,
Well enough agreeing.

Lol. Ay, sir, but the old trees raise themselves higher
and broader than the young plants.

Alib. Shrewd application! ¹ there's the fear, man;
I would wear my ring on my own finger;
Whilst it is borrow'd, it is none of mine,
But his that useth it.

Lol. You must keep it on still then; if it but lie by,
one or other will be thrusting into't. 31

Alib. Thou conceiv'st me, Lollo; here thy watchful
eye

Must have employment; I cannot always be
At home.

Lol. I dare swear you cannot.

Alib. I must look out.

Lol. I know't, you must look out, 'tis every man's
case.

Alib. Here, I do say, must thy employment be;
To watch her treadings, and in my absence 40
Supply my place.

Lol. I'll do my best, sir; yet surely I cannot see who
you should have cause to be jealous of.

Alib. Thy reason for that, Lollo? it is
A comfortable question.

Lol. We have but two sorts of people in the house,
and both under the whip, that's fools and madmen; the

¹ "The 'shrewd application' meant is, I conceive, to that perpetual jest of the age, the cuckold's horns; which Lollo supposes might raise Alibius's head above his wife's."—Editor of 1816.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

hour ; at nine gather flowers and pluck a rose,¹ that's nose-hour ; at ten we drink, that's mouth-hour ; at eleven lay about us for victuals, that's hand-hour ; at twelve go to dinner, that's belly-hour.

Alib. Profoundly, Lollo ! it will be long 80
Ere all thy scholars learn this lesson, and
I did look to have a new one enter'd ;—stay,
I think my expectation is come home.

Enter PEDRO, and ANTONIO disguised as an idiot.

Ped. Save you, sir ; my business speaks itself,
This sight takes off the labour of my tongue.

Alib. Ay, ay, sir, it is plain enough, you mean
Him for my patient.

Ped. And if your pains prove but commodious, to give
but some little strength to the² sick and weak part of
nature in him, these are [*gives him money*] but patterns
to show you of the whole pieces that will follow to you,
beside the charge of diet, washing, and other necessaries,
fully defrayed. 93

Alib. Believe it, sir, there shall no care be wanting.

Lol. Sir, an officer in this place may deserve some-
thing, the trouble will pass through my hands.

Ped. 'Tis fit something should come to your hands
then, sir. [*Gives him money.*]

Lol. Yes, sir, 'tis I must keep him sweet, and read to
him : what is his name ? 100

¹ "Pluck a rose" = *alvum exonerare*.

² Old ed. "his."

Ped. His name is Antonio ; marry, we use but half to him, only Tony.

Lol. Tony, Tony, 'tis enough, and a very good name for a fool.—What's your name, Tony?

Ant. He, he, he ! well, I thank you, cousin ; he, he, he !

Lol. Good boy ! hold up your head.—He can laugh ; I perceive by that he is no beast.

Ped. Well, sir,
If you can raise him but to any height, 110
Any degree of wit, might he attain,
As I might say, to creep but on all four
Towards the chair of wit, or walk on crutches,
'Twould add an honour to your worthy pains,
And a great family might pray for you,
To which he should be heir, had he discretion
To claim and guide his own : assure you, sir,
He is a gentleman.

Lol. Nay, there's nobody doubted that ; at first sight I knew him for a gentleman, he looks no other yet. 120

Ped. Let him have good attendance and sweet lodging.

Lol. As good as my mistress lies in, sir } and as you
allow us time and means, we can raise him to the higher
degree of discretion.

Ped. Nay, there shall no cost want, sir.

Lol. He will hardly be stretched up to the wit of a magnifico.

Ped. O no, that's not to be expected ; far shorter will be enough.

Lol. I'll warrant you [I'll] make him fit to bear office in five weeks; I'll undertake to wind him up to the wit of constable. 132

Ped. If it be lower than that, it might serve turn.

Lol. No, fie; to level him with a headborough, headle, or watchman, were but little better than he is: constable I'll able¹ him; if he do come to be a justice afterwards, let him thank the keeper: or I'll go further with you; say I do bring him up to my own pitch, say I make him as wise as myself.

Ped. Why, there I would have it. 140

Lol. Well, go to; either I'll be as arrant a fool as he, or he shall be as wise as I, and then I think 'twill serve his turn.

Ped. Nay, I do like thy wit passing well.

Lol. Yes, you may; yet if I had not been a fool, I had had more wit than I have too; remember what state² you find me in.

Ped. I will, and so leave you: your best cares, I beseech you. 149

Alib. Take you none with you, leave em' all with us.

[Exit PEDRO.]

Ant. O, my cousin's gone! cousin, cousin, O!

Lol. Peace, peace, Tony; you must not cry, child, you must be whipped if you do; your cousin is here still; I am your cousin, Tony.

Ant. He, he! then I'll not cry, if thou be'st my cousin; he, he, he!

¹ Warrant.

² "i.e. as a keeper of fools and madmen."—Editor of 1816.

Lol. I were best try his wit a little, that I may know what form to place him in.

Alib. Ay, do, Lollo, do. 159

Lol. I must ask him easy questions at first.—Tony, how many true¹ fingers has a tailor on his right hand?

Ant. As many as on his left, cousin.

Lol. Good: and how many on both?

Ant. Two less than a deuce, cousin.

Lol. Very well answered: I come to you again, cousin Tony; how many fools goes to a wise man?

Ant. Forty in a day sometimes, cousin.

Lol. Forty in a day? how prove you that?

Ant. All that fall out amongst themselves, and go to a lawyer to be made friends. 170

Lol. A parlous² fool! he must sit in the fourth form at least, I perceive that.—I come again, Tony; how many knaves make an honest man?

Ant. I know not that, cousin.

Lol. No, the question is too hard for you: I'll tell you, cousin; there's three knaves may make an honest man, a sergeant, a jailor, and a beadle; the sergeant catches him, the jailor holds him, and the beadle lashes him; and if he be not honest then, the hangman must cure him. 180

Ant. Ha, ha, ha! that's fine sport, cousin.

¹ Honest.—The reputation of tailors for honesty did not stand high. Nares (*s.* TAYLOR) quotes from *Pasquil's Night-Cap*—

“Thieving is now an occupation made,
Though men the name of *tailor* do it give.”

² *Perilous*.—dangerously shrewd.

Alib. This was too deep a question for the fool,
Lollo.

Lol. Yes, this might have served yourself, though I say't.—Once more and you shall go play, Tony.

Ant. Ay, play at push-pin, cousin ; ha, he !

Lol. So thou shalt : say how many fools are here——

Ant. Two, cousin ; thou and I.

Lol. Nay, you're too forward there, Tony : mark my question ; how many fools and knaves are here ; a fool before a knave, a fool behind a knave, between every two fools a knave ; how many fools, how many knaves ? 191

Ant. I never learnt so far, cousin.

Alib. Thou puttest too hard questions to him,
Lollo.

Lol. I'll make him understand it easily.—Cousin, stand there.

Ant. Ay, cousin.

Lol. Master, stand you next the fool.

Alib. Well, Lollo.

Lol. Here's my place : mark now, Tony, there'[s] a fool before a knave. 200

Ant. That's I, cousin.

Lol. Here's a fool behind a knave, that's I ; and between us two fools there is a knave, that's my master ; 'tis but we three, that's all.

Ant. We three, we three,¹ cousin.

¹ "Antonio probably alludes to the old sign of *two* idiots' heads with an inscription,

We three

Loggerheads be."—Editor of 1816.

First Mad. [*within.*] Put's head i' th' pillory, the bread's too little.

Sec. Mad. [*within.*] Fly, fly, and he catches the swallow.

Third Mad. [*within.*] Give her more onion, or the devil put the rope about her crag.¹ 210

Lol. You may hear what time of day it is, the chimes of Bedlam goes.

Alib. Peace, peace, or the wire² comes!

Third Mad. [*within.*] Cat whore, cat whore! her parmasant, her parmasant!³

Alib. Peace, I say!—Their hour's come, they must be fed, Lollo.

Lol. There's no hope of recovery of that Welsh madman; was undone by a mouse that spoiled him a parmasant; lost his wits for't. 220

Alib. Go to your charge, Lollo; I'll to mine.

Lol. Go you to your madmen's ward, let me alone with your fools.

Alib. And remember my last charge, Lollo. [*Exit.*

Lol. Of which your patients do you think I am?—Come, Tony, you must amongst your school-fellows now; there's pretty scholars amongst 'em, I can tell you; there's some of 'em at *stultus, stulla, stultum*.

Ant. I would see the madmen, cousin, if they would not bite me. 230

Lol. No, they shall not bite thee, Tony.

¹ Neck.

² Whip.

³ Parmesan cheese.

Ant. They bite when they are at dinner, do they not, coz?

Lol. They bite at dinner indeed, Tony. Well, I hope to get credit by thee; I like thee the best of all the scholars that ever I brought up, and thou shalt prove a wise man, or I'll prove a fool myself. [*Exeunt.*

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Which is the greatest darkness falls on love,
 Yet is he best discern'd then
 With intellectual eyesight. What's Piraequo,
 My father spends his breath for? and his blessing 20
 Is only mine as I regard his name,
 Else it goes from me, and turns head against me,
 Transform'd into a curse : some speedy way
 Must be remember'd ; he's so forward too,
 So urgent that way, scarce allows me breath
 To speak to my new comforts.

Enter DE FLORES.

De F. Yonder's she ;
 Whatever ails me, now a-late especially,
 I can as well be hanged as refrain seeing her ;
 Some twenty times a-day, nay, not so little,
 Do I force errands, frame ways and excuses, 30
 To come into her sight ; and I've small reason for't,
 And less encouragement, for she baits me still
 Every time worse than other ; does profess herself
 The cruellest enemy to my face in town ;
 At no hand can abide the sight of me,
 As if danger or ill luck hung in my looks.
 I must confess my face is bad enough,
 But I know far worse has better fortune,
 And not endur'd alone, but doted on ;
 And yet such pick-hair'd faces, chins like witches', 40
 Here and there five hairs whispering in a corner,
 As if they grew in fear one of another,
 Wrinkles like troughs, where swine-deformity swills

The tears of perjury, that lie there like wash
 Fallen from the slimy and dishonest eye ;
 Yet such a one plucks¹ sweets without restraint,
 And has the grace of beauty to his sweet.
 Though my hard fate has thrust me out to servitude,
 I tumbled into th' world a gentleman.

She turns her blessed eye upon me now, 50
 And I'll endure all storms before I part with't. [*Aside.*]

Beat. Again ?

This ominous ill-fac'd fellow more disturbs me
 Than all my other passions. [*Aside.*]

De F. Now 't begins again ;
 I'll stand this storm of hail, though the stones pelt me.
 [*Aside.*]

Beat. Thy business? what's thy business?

De F. Soft and fair !
 I cannot part so soon now. [*Aside.*]

Beat. The villain's fix'd.— [*Aside.*]
 Thou standing toad-pool——

De F. The shower falls amain now. [*Aside.*]

Beat. Who sent thee? what's thy errand? leave my
 sight !

De F. My lord, your father, charg'd me to deliver 60
 A message to you.

Beat. What, another since ?
 Do't, and be hang'd then ; let me be rid of thee.

De F. True service merits mercy.

Beat. What's thy message ?

¹ Old ed. "pluckt."

De F. Let beauty settle but in patience,
You shall hear all.

Beat. A dallying, trifling torment!

De F. Signor Alonzo de Piracquo, lady,
Sole brother to Tomaso de Piracquo——

Beat. Slave, when wilt make an end?

De F. Too soon I shall.

Beat. What all this while of him?

De F. The said Alonzo,
With the foresaid Tomaso——

Beat. Yet again?

70

De F. Is new alighted.

Beat. Vengeance strike the news!
Thou thing most loath'd, what cause was there in
this

To bring thee to my sight?

De F. My lord, your father,
Charg'd me to seek you out.

Beat. Is there no other
To send his errand by?

De F. It seems 'tis my luck
To be i' th' way still.

Beat. Get thee from me!

De F. So:
Why, am not I an ass to devise ways
Thus to be rail'd at? I must see her still!
I shall have a mad qualm within this hour again,
I know't; and, like a common Garden-bull,¹

80

¹ Bulls were baited at Paris Garden (on the Bankside).

I do but take breath to be lugg'd¹ again.
 What this may bode I know not ; I'll despair the less,
 Because there's daily precedents of bad faces
 Belov'd beyond all reason ; these foul chops
 May come into favour one day 'mongst their² fellows :
 Wrangling has prov'd the mistress of good pastime ;
 As children cry themselves asleep, I ha' seen
 Women have chid themselves a-bed to men.

[*Aside, and exit.*

Beat. I never see this fellow but I think
Of some harm towards me, danger's in my mind still ;
I scarce leave trembling of an hour after : 91
The next good mood I find my father in,
 I'll get him quite discarded. O, I was
 Lost in this small disturbance, and forgot
 Affliction's fiercer torrent that now comes
 To bear down all my comforts !

Enter VERMANDERO, ALONZO, and TOMASO.

Ver. You're both welcome,
 But an especial one belongs to you, sir,
 To whose most noble name our love presents
 Th' addition of a son, our son Alonzo.

Alon. The treasury of honour cannot bring forth 100
 A title I should more rejoice in, sir.

¹ Dragged by the ear.—The term "lug" is usually found in connection with bull-baiting or bear-baiting. Falstaff protested that he was "as melancholy as a gib cat or a lugg'd bear."

² Old ed. "his."

Ver. You have improv'd it well.—Daughter, prepare ;
The day will steal upon thee suddenly.

Beat. Howe'er I will be sure to keep the night,
If it should come so near me. [*Aside.*

[*BEATRICE and VERMANDERO talk apart.*

Tom. Alonzo.

Alon. Brother ?

Tom. In troth I see small welcome in her eye.

Alon. Fie, you are too severe a censurer
Of love in all points, there's no bringing on you :
If lovers should mark everything a fault,
Affection would be like an ill-set book, 110

(Whose faults might prove as big as half the volume.

Beat. That's all I do entreat.

Ver. It is but reasonable ;
I'll see what my son says to't.—Son Alonzo,
Here is a motion made but to reprieve
A maidenhead three days longer ; the request
Is not far out of reason, for indeed
The former time is pinching.

Alon. Though my joys
Be set back so much time as I could wish
They had been forward, yet since she desires it,
The time is set as pleasing as before, 120
I find no gladness wanting.

Ver. May I ever
Meet it in that point still I you're nobly welcome, sirs.

[*Exit with BEATRICE.*

Tom. So ; did you mark the dulness of her parting
now ?

Alon. What dulness? thou art so exceptionous still!

Tom. Why, let it go then; I am but a fool
To mark your harms so heedfully.

Alon. Where's the oversight?

Tom. Come, your faith's cozen'd in her, strongly
cozen'd:

Unsettle your affection with all speed
Wisdom can bring it to; your peace is ruined else.
Think what a torment 'tis to marry one 130
Whose heart is leap'd into another's bosom:
If ever pleasure she receive from thee,
It comes not in thy name, or of thy gift;
She lies but with another in thine arms,
He the half-father unto all thy children
In the conception; if he get 'em not,
She helps ¹ to get 'em for him; and how dangerous
And shameful her restraint may go ² in time to,
It is not to be thought on without sufferings. 139

Alon. You speak as if she lov'd some other, then.

Tom. Do you apprehend so slowly?

Alon. Nay, and that
~~Be your fear only, I am safe enough!~~
Preserve your friendship and your counsel, brother,
For times of more distress; I should depart
An enemy, a dangerous, deadly one,

¹ The old ed. gives—"She helps to get 'em for him, *in his passions,* and how dangerous." It is not easy to explain the presence of the italicised words, which cannot possibly be retained.

² Qu. "grow"?

Alon. What dulness? thou art so exceptionous still!

Tom. Why, let it go then; I am but a fool
To mark your harms so heedfully.

Alon. Where's the oversight?

Tom. Come, your faith's cozen'd in her, strongly
cozen'd:

Unsettle your affection with all speed
Wisdom can bring it to; your peace is ruined else.
Think what a torment 'tis to marry one 130
Whose heart is leap'd into another's bosom:
If ever pleasure she receive from thee,
It comes not in thy name, or of thy gift;
She lies but with another in thine arms,
He the half-father unto all thy children
In the conception; if he get 'em not,
She helps ¹ to get 'em for him; and how dangerous
And shameful her restraint may go ² in time to,
It is not to be thought on without sufferings. 131

Alon. You speak as if she lov'd some other, then.

Tom. Do you apprehend so slowly?

Alon. Nay, and that

Be your fear only, I am safe enough!
Preserve your friendship and your counsel, brother,
For times of more distress; I should depart
An enemy, a dangerous, deadly one,

¹ The old ed. gives—"She helps to get 'em for him, *in his passion.* and how dangerous." It is not easy to explain the presence of the italicised words, which cannot possibly be retained.

² Qu. "grow"?

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

And brings 'em down to furnish our defects, 10
 Come not more sweet to our necessities
 Than thou unto my wishes.

Alc. We're so like
 In our expressions, lady, that unless I borrow
 The same words, I shall never find their equals.

Beat. How happy were this meeting, this embrace,
 If it were free from envy ! this poor kiss,
 It has an enemy, a hateful one,
 That wishes poison to't : how well were I now,
 If there were none such name known as Piracquo,
~~Not no such tie as the command of parents !~~ 20
 I should be but too much bless'd.

Alc. One good service
 Would strike off both your fears, and I'll go near't too,
 Since you are so distress'd ; remove the cause,
 The command ceases ; so there's two fears blown out
 With one and the same blast.

Beat. Pray, let me find you, sir :
 What might that service be, so strangely happy ?

Alc. The honourablest piece about man, valour :
 I'll send a challenge to Piracquo instantly.

Beat. How ? call you that extinguishing of fear,
 When 'tis the only way to keep it flaming ? 30
 Are not you ventur'd in the action,
 That's all my joys and comforts ? pray, no more, sir :
 Say you prevail'd, you're danger's and not mine then ;
 The law would claim you from me, or obscurity
 Be made the grave to bury you alive.
 I'm glad these thoughts come forth ; O, keep not one

Of this condition, sir ! here was a course
 Found to bring sorrow on her way to death ;
 The tears would ne'er ha' dried, till dust had chok'd 'em.
 Blood-guiltiness becomes a fouler visage ;— 40

And now I think on one ; I was to blame,
 I ha' marr'd so good a market with my scorn ;
 'Thad been done questionless : 'the ugliest creature
 Creation fram'd for some use ; yet to see
 I could not mark so much where it should be ! [*Aside.*

Als. Lady—

Beat. Why, men of art make much of poison,
 Keep one to expel another ; where was my art ? [*Aside.*

Als. Lady, you hear not me.

Beat. I do especially, sir ;
 The present times are not so sure of our side
 As those hereafter may be ; we must use 'em then 50
 As thrifty folks their wealth, sparingly now,
 Till the time opens.

Als. You teach wisdom, lady.

Beat. Within there ! Diaphanta !

Re-enter DIAPHANTA.

Dia. Do you call, madam ?

Beat. Perfect your service, and conduct this gentle-
 man

The private way you brought him.

Dia. I shall, madam.

Als. My love's as firm as love e'er built upon.

[*Exit with* DIAPHANTA.]

Enter DE FLORES.

De F. I've watch'd this meeting, and do wonder much
 What shall become of t'other ; I'm sure both
 Cannot be serv'd unless she transgress ; haply
 Then I'll put in for one ; for if a woman 60
 Fly from one point, from him she makes a husband,
 She spreads and mounts then like arithmetic ;
 One, ten, a hundred, a thousand, ten thousand,
 Proves in time sutler to an army royal.
 Now do I look to be most richly rail'd at,
 Yet I must see her. [*Aside.*

Beat. Why, put case I loath'd him
 As much as youth and beauty hates a sepulchre,
 Must I needs show it? cannot I keep that secret,
 And serve my turn upon him? See, he's here.— [*Aside.*
De Flores.

De F. Ha, I shall run mad with joy ! 70
 She call'd me fairly by my name De Flores,
 And neither rogue nor rascal. [*Aside.*

Beat. What ha' you done
 To your face a' late? you've met with some good
 physician ;
 You've prun'd¹ yourself, methinks : you were not wont
 To look so amorously.²

¹ A hawk is said to prune itself when it sets its feathers in order with its beak.

² "i.e. so much an object of love. Compare *Epigrams and Satyres*, by Richard Middleton, 1608 : Longato 'amorous in his Maias cie,' &c. P. 3."—*Dyce.*

De F. Not I;—

'Tis the same physnomy, to a hair and pimple,
Which she call'd scurvy scarce an hour ago:
How is this?

[*Aside.*

Beat. Come hither; nearer, man.

De F. I'm up to the chin in heaven!

[*Aside.*

Beat. Turn, let me see;

Faugh, 'tis but the heat of the liver, I perceive't; 80
I thought it had been worse.

De F. Her fingers touch'd me!

She smells all amber.

[*Aside.*

Beat. I'll make a water for you shall cleanse this
Within a fortnight.

De F. With your own hands, lady?

Beat. Yes, mine own, sir; in a work of cure
I'll trust no other.

De F. 'Tis half an act of pleasure
To hear her talk thus to me.

[*Aside.*

Beat. When we're us'd
To a hard face, it is not so unpleasing;
It mends still in opinion, hourly mends;
I see it by experience.

De F. I was bless'd
To light upon this minute; I'll make use on't.

90

[*Aside.*

Beat. Hardness becomes the visage of a man
well;
It argues service, resolution, manhood,
If cause were of employment.

De F. 'Twould be soon seen,
If e'er your ladyship had cause to use it;

I would but wish the honour of a service
So happy as that mounts to.

Beat. We shall try you :

O my De Flores !

De F. How's that? she calls me hers ;
Already, my De Flores ! [*Aside.*]—You were about
To sigh out somewhat, madam ?

Beat. No, was I?

100

I forgot,—O !—

De F. There 'tis again, the very fellow on't.

Beat. You are too quick, sir.

De F. There's no excuse for't now ; I heard it twice,
madam ;

That sigh would fain have utterance : take pity on't,
And lend it a free word ; 'las, how it labours
For liberty ! I hear the murmur yet
Beat at your bosom.

Beat. Would creation—

De F. Ay, well said, that is it.

Beat. Had form'd me man !

De F. Nay, that's not it.

Beat. O, 'tis the soul of freedom !

110

I should not then be forc'd to marry one
I hate beyond all depths ; I should have power
Then to oppose my loathings, ~~nay, remove 'em~~
For ever from my sight.

De F. O bless'd occasion !

[*Aside.*

Without change to your sex you have your wishes ;
Claim so much man in me.

Beat. In thee, De Flores?
There is small cause for that.

De F. Put it not from me,
It is a service that I kneel for to you. [*Kneels.*]

Beat. You are too violent to mean faithfully :
There's horror in my service, blood, and danger ; 120
Can those be things to sue for ?

De F. If you knew
How sweet it were to me to be employ'd
In any act of yours, you would say then
I fail'd, and us'd not reverence enough
When I receiv'[d] the charge on't.

Beat. This is much, methinks ;
Belike his wants are greedy ; and to such
Gold tastes like angel's food. [*Aside.*]—[De Flores,]
rise.

De F. I'll have the work first.

Beat. Possible his need
Is strong upon him. [*Aside.*]—There's to encourage
thee ; [*Gives money.*]

As thou art forward, and thy service dangerous, 130
Thy reward shall be precious.

De F. That I've thought on ;
I have assur'd myself of that beforehand,
And know it will be precious ; the thought ravishes !

Beat. Then take him to thy fury !

De F. I thirst for him.

Beat. Alonzo de Piracquo.

De F. [*rising.*] His end's upon him ;
He shall be seen no more.

Dearlier rewarded.

De F. I do think of that.

Beat. Be wondrous careful in the execution.

De F. Why, are not both our lives upon the cast? 140

Beat. Then I throw all my fears upon thy service.

De F. They ne'er shall rise to hurt you.

Beat. When the deed's done,
I'll furnish thee with all things for thy flight ;
Thou may'st live bravely in another country.

De F. Ay, ay ;
We'll talk of that hereafter.

Beat. I shall rid myself
Of two inveterate loathings at one time,
Piracquo, and his dog-face. [*Aside and exit.*

De F. O my blood !
Methinks I feel her in mine arms already ;
Her wanton fingers combing out this beard, 150
And, being pleasèd, praising this bad face.
Hunger and pleasure, they'll commend sometimes
Slovenly dishes, and feed heartily on 'em.
Nay, which is stranger, refuse daintier for 'em :
Some women are odd feeders.—I'm too loud.
Here comes the man goes supperless to bed,
Yet shall not rise to-morrow to his dinner.

Enter ALONZO.

Alon. De Flores.

De F. My kind, honourable lord ?

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

ACT III.

SCENE I.

A Narrow Passage in the Castle.

Enter ALONZO and DE FLORES. (In the act-time¹ DE FLORES hides a naked rapier behind a door.²)

De F. Yes, here are all the keys ; I was afraid, my lord,

I'd wanted for the postern, this is it :

I've all, I've all, my lord : this for the sconce.

¹ When the music played between the acts.

² " Whiles Piracquo is at dinner with Vermandero, De Flores is providing of a bloody banquet in the east casemate ; where of purpose he goes and hides a naked sword and poniard behind the door. Now dinner being ended, Piracquo finds out De Flores, and summons him of his promise ; who tells him he is ready to wait on him : so away they go from the walls to the ravelins, sconces, and bulwarks, and from thence by a postern to the ditches ; and so in again to the casemates, whereof they have already viewed three, and are now going to the last, which is the theatre whereon we shall presently see acted a mournful and bloody tragedy. At the descent hereof De Flores puts off his rapier, and leaves it behind him ; treacherously informing Piracquo that the descent is narrow and craggy. See here the policy and villany of this devilish and treacherous miscreant. Piracquo, not doubting nor dreaming of any treason, follows his example, and so casts off his rapier : De Flores leads the way, and he follows him ; but alas ! poor gentle-

Alon. 'Tis a most spacious and impregnable fort.

De F. You will tell me more, my lord : this descent
Is somewhat narrow, we shall never pass
Well with our weapons, they'll but trouble us.

Alon. Thou sayest true.

De F. Pray, let me help your lordship.

Alon. 'Tis done : thanks, kind De Fiores.

De F. Here are hooks, my lord,
To hang such things on purpose.

[*Hanging up his own sword and that of ALONZO.*

Alon. Lead, I'll follow thee. [Exeunt. 10

SCENE II.

*A Vault.*¹

Enter ALONZO and DE FLORES.

De F. All this is nothing ; you shall see anon
A place you little dream on.

man, he shall never return with his life. They enter the vault of the casemate, De Flores opens the door, and throws it back, thereby to hide his sword and poniard : he stoops and looks through a porthole, and tells him that that piece doth thoroughly scour the ditch. Piracquo stoops likewise down to view it, when (O grief to think thereon) De Flores steps for his weapons, and with his poniard stabs him through the back, and swiftly redoubling blow upon blow, kills him dead at his feet, and without going farther, buries him there, right under the ruins of an old wall, whereof that casemate was built."—Reynold's *Triumphs of God's Revenge against Murther*, pp. 54, 55, ed. 1635.

¹ Old ed. "*Ex. at one door and enter at the other.*" As there was no movable painted scenery, it was left to the audience to imagine a change of scene.

Alon. I am glad
I have this leisure; all your master's house
Imagine I ha' taken a gondola.

De F. All but myself, sir,—which makes up my
safety. *[Aside.*

My lord, I'll place you at a casement here
Will show you the full strength of all the castle.
Look, spend your eye awhile upon that object.

Alon. Here's rich variety, De Flores.

De F. Yes, sir.

Alon. Goodly munition.

De F. Ay, there's ordnance, sir, 10
No bastard metal, will ring you a peal like bells
At great men's funerals: keep your eye straight, my
lord;
Take special notice of that sconce before you,
There you may dwell awhile.

[Takes the rapier which he had hid behind the door.]

Alon. I am upon't.

De F. And so am I. *[Stabs him.]*

Alon. De Flores! O De Flores!
Whose malice hast thou put on?

De F. Do you question
A work of secrecy? I must silence you. *[Stabs him.]*

Alon. O, O, O!

De F. I must silence you. *[Stabs him.]*

So here's an undertaking well accomplish'd: 20
This vault serves to good use now: ha, what's that
Threw sparkles in my eye? O, 'tis a diamond
He wears upon his finger; 'twas well found,

This will approve¹ the work. What, so fast on?
 Not part in death? I'll take a speedy course then,
 Finger and all shall off. [*Cuts off the finger.*] So, now
 I'll clear

The passages from all suspect or fear.

[*Exit with the body.*]

SCENE III.

An Apartment in the House of ALIBIUS.

Enter ISABELLA and LOLLIO.

Isa. Why, sirrah, whence have you commission
 To fetter the doors against me?
 If you keep me in a cage, pray, whistle to me,
 Let me be doing something.

Lol. You shall be doing, if it please you; I'll whistle
 to you, if you'll pipe after.

Isa. Is it your master's pleasure, or your own,
 To keep me in this pifold?

Lol. 'Tis for my master's pleasure, lest being taken in
 another man's corn, you might be pounded in another
 place.

11

Isa. 'Tis very well, and he'll prove very wise.

Lol. He says you have company enough in the house,
 if you please to be sociable, of all sorts of people.

¹ Prove that the work has been done.

Isa. Of all sorts? why, here's none but fools and madmen.

Lol. Very well: and where will you find any other, if you should go abroad? there's my master, and I to boot too.

Isa. Of either sort one, a madman and a fool.

Lol. I would even participate of both then if I were as you; I know you're half mad already, be half foolish too.

22

Isa. You're a brave saucy rascal! come on, sir, Afford me then the pleasure of your bedlam; You were commending once to-day to me Your last-come lunatic; what a proper¹ Body there was without brains to guide it, And what a pitiful delight appear'd In that defect, as if your wisdom had found A mirth in madness; pray, sir, let me partake, If there be such a pleasure.

30

Lol. If I do not show you the handsomest, discreetest madman, one that I may call the understanding madman, then say I am a fool.

Isa. Well, a match, I will say so.

Lol. When you have [had] a taste of the madman, you shall, if you please, see Fools' College, o' th' [other] side. I seldom lock there; 'tis but shooting a bolt or two, and you are amongst 'em. [*Exit, and brings in FRANCISCUS.*—Come on, sir; let me see how handsomely you'll behave yourself now.

41

¹ Handsome.

Fran. How sweetly she looks! O, but there's a wrinkle in her brow as deep as philosophy. Anacreon, drink to my mistress' health, I'll pledge it; stay, stay, there's a spider in the cup! no, 'tis but a grape-stone; swallow it, fear nothing, poet; so, so, lift higher.

Isa. Alack, alack, it is too full of pity
To be laugh'd at! How fell he mad? canst thou tell?

Lol. For love, mistress: he was a pretty poet too, and that set him forwards first: the Muses then forsook him; he ran mad for a chambermaid, yet she was but a dwarf neither.

52

Fran. Hail, bright Titania!
Why stand'st thou idle on these flowery banks?
Oberon is dancing with his Dryades;
I'll gather daisies, primrose, violets,
And bind them in a verse of poesy.

Lol. [*holding up a whip.*] Not too near! you see your danger.

Fran. O, hold thy hand, great Diomedé! 60
Thou feed'st thy horses well, they shall obey thee:
Get up, Bucephalus kneels. [*Kneels.*]

Lol. You see how I awe my flock; a shepherd has not his dog at more obedience.

Isa. His conscience is unquiet; sure that was
The cause of this: a proper gentleman!

Fran. Come hither, Æsculapius; hide the poison.

Lol. Well, 'tis hid. [*Hides the whip.*]

Fran. Didst thou ne'er hear of one Tiresias,
A famous prophet?¹

70

¹ Old ed. "poet."

Lol. Yes, that kept tame wild geese.

Fran. That's he; I am the man.

Lol. No?

Fran. Yes; but make no words on't; I was a man
Seven years ago.

Lol. A stripling, I think, you might.

Fran. Now I'm a woman, all feminine.

Lol. I would I might see that!

Fran. Juno struck me blind.

Lol. I'll ne'er believe that: for a woman, they say, has
an eye more than a man. 81

Fran. I say she struck me blind.

Lol. And Luna made you mad; you have two trades
to beg with.

Fran. Luna is now big-bellied, and there's room
For both of us to ride with Hecate;
I'll drag thee up into her silver sphere,
And there we'll kick the dog—and beat the bush—
That barks against the witches of the night;
The swift lycanthropi¹ that walks the round, 90
We'll tear their wolvish skins, and save the sheep.

[Attempts to seize LOLLIO.]

¹ "Lycanthropia, which *Avicenna* calls *Cucubuth*, others *Lupinam insaniam*, or wolf-madness, when men run howling about graves and fields in the night, and will not be persuaded but that they are wolves, or some such beasts. *Ætius* and *Paulus* call it a kind of *melancholy*, but I should rather refer it to *madness*, as most do. Some make a doubt of it whether there be any such disease. *Donatus Altomarus* saith that he saw two of them in his time: *Wierus* tells a story of such a one at *Padua*, 1541, that would not believe to the contrary but that he was a wolf. He hath another instance of a *Spaniard* who thought himself a bear. *Forrestus* confirms as much by many examples; one

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Ant. He, he ! how do you, uncle ?

Lol. Fear him not, mistress, 'tis a gentle nigget ;¹ you may play with him, as safely with him as with his bauble.

Isa. How long hast thou been a fool ? 112

Ant. Ever since I came hither, cousin.

Isa. Cousin ? I'm none of thy cousins, fool.

Lol. O, mistress, fools have always so much wit as to claim their kindred.

Madman [*within*]. Bounce, bounce ! he falls, he falls ! ~-

Isa. Hark you, your scholars in the upper room
Are out of order. 119

Lol. Must I come amongst you there ?—Keep you the fool, mistress ; I'll go up and play left-handed Orlando amongst the madmen. [*Exit.*

Isa. Well, sir.

Ant. 'Tis opportuneful now, sweet lady ! nay,
Cast no amazing eye upon this change.

Isa. Ha !

Ant. This shape of folly shrouds your dearest love,
The truest servant to your powerful beauties,
Whose magic had this force thus to transform me.

Isa. You're a fine fool indeed !

Ant. O, 'tis not strange ! 130
Love has an intellect that runs through all
The scrutinous sciences, and, like a cunning poet,
Catches a quantity of every knowledge,
Yet brings all home into one mystery,
Into one secret, that he proceeds in.

¹ Idiot.

Isa. You're a parlous fool.

Ant. No danger in me ; I bring nought but love
And his soft-wounding shafts to strike you with :
Try but one arrow ; if it hurt you, I
Will stand you twenty back in recompense. 140

Isa. A forward fool too !

Ant. This was love's teaching :
A thousand ways he¹ fashion'd out my way,
And this I found the safest and [the] nearest,
To tread the galaxia to my star.

Isa. Profound withal ! certain you dream'd of this,
Love never taught it waking.

Ant. Take no acquaintance
Of these outward follies, there's within
A gentleman that loves you.

Isa. When I see him,
I'll speak with him ; so, in the meantime, keep
Your habit, it becomes you well enough : 150
As you're a gentleman, I'll not discover you ;
That's all the favour that you must expect :
When you are weary, you may leave the school,
For all this while you have but play'd the fool.

Re-enter LOLLIO.

Ant. And must again.—He, he ! I thank you,
cousin ;
I'll be your valentine to-morrow morning.

Lol. How do you like the fool, mistress ?

¹ Old ed. "she."

Isa. Passing well, sir.

Lol. Is he not witty, pretty well, for a fool?

Isa. If he holds on as he begins, he's like 160

To come to something.

Lol. Ay, thank a good tutor: you may put him to't; he begins to answer pretty hard questions.—Tony, how many is five times six?

Ant. Five times six is six times five.

Lol. What arithmetician could have answered better?

How many is one hundred and seven?

Ant. One hundred and seven is seven hundred and one, cousin. 169

Lol. This is no wit to speak on!—Will you be rid of the fool now?

Isa. By no means; let him stay a little.

Madman [*within*]. Catch there, catch the last couple in hell! ¹

Lol. Again! must I come amongst you? Would my master were come home! I am not able to govern both these wards together. [*Exit.*

Ant. Why should a minute of love's hour be lost?

Isa. Fie, out again! I had rather you kept Your other posture; you become not your tongue 180
When you speak from your clothes.

Ant. How can he freeze

Lives near so sweet a warmth? shall I alone

¹ An allusion to the game of *Barley-break*, or *the Last Couple in Hell*. See Nares' *Glossary*, s. BARLIBREAK.

Walk through the orchard of th' Hesperides,
And, cowardly, not dare to pull an apple?

Enter LOLLIO above.

This with the red cheeks I must venture for.

[Attempts to kiss her.

Isa. Take heed, there's giants keep 'em.

Lol. How now, fool, are you good at that? have you read Lipsius?¹ he's past *Ars Amandi*; I believe I must put harder questions to him, I perceive that. *[Aside.*

Isa. You're bold without fear too.

Ant. What should I fear,

190

Having all joys about me? Do you smile,
And love shall play the wanton on your lip,
Meet and retire, retire and meet again;
Look you but cheerfully, and in your eyes
I shall behold mine own deformity,
And dress myself up fairer: I know this shape
Becomes me not, but in those bright mirrors
I shall array me handsomely.

*[Cries of madmen are heard within, like those of
birds and beasts.*

Lol. Cuckoo, cuckoo!

[Exit above.

Ant. What are these?

200

Isa. Of fear enough to part us;
Yet are they but our schools of lunatics,
That act their fantasies in any shapes

¹ "Is it necessary to notice that the name of this great scholar is introduced merely for the sake of its first syllable?"—*Dyce.*

Suiting their present thoughts : if sad, they cry ;
~~If mirth be their conceit, they laugh again :~~
~~Sometimes they imitate the beasts and birds,~~
~~Singing or howling, braying, barking ; all~~
~~As their wild fancies prompt 'em.~~

~~Ant. These are no fears.~~

Isa. But's here's a large one, my man.

210

Re-enter LOLLIO.

Ant. Ha, he ! that's fine sport indeed, cousin.

Lol. I would my master were come home ! 'tis too much for one shepherd to govern two of these flocks ; nor can I believe that one churchman can instruct two benefices at once ; there will be some incurable mad of the one side, and very fools on the other.—Come, Tony.

Ant. Prithee, cousin, let me stay here still.

Lol. No, you must to your book now ; you have played sufficiently.

Isa. Your fool has grown wondrous witty. 220

Lol. Well, I'll say nothing : but I do not think but he will put you down one of these days.

[*Exit with ANTONIO.*

Isa. Here the restrained current might make breach,
 Spite of the watchful bankers : would a woman stray,
 She need not gad abroad to seek her sin,
 It would be brought home one way¹ or other :

¹ Old ed. " wayes."

The needle's point will to the fixèd north ;
Such drawing artics women's beauties are.

Re-enter LOLLIO.

Lol. How dost thou, sweet rogue ?

Isa. How now ?

230

Lol. Come, there are degrees ; one fool may be better than another.

Isa. What's the matter ?

Lol. Nay, if thou givest thy mind to fool's flesh, have at thee !

Isa. You bold slave, you !

Lol. I could follow now as t'other fool did :

What should I fear,

Having all joys about me ? Do you but smile,

And love shall play the wanton on your lip,

240

Meet and retire, retire and meet again ;

Look you but cheerfully, and in your eyes

I shall behold my own deformity,

And dress myself up fairer : I know this shape

Becomes me not—

and so as it follows : but is not this the more foolish way ? Come, sweet rogue ; kiss me, my little Lacedæmonian ; let me feel how thy pulses beat ; thou hast a thing about thee would do a man pleasure, I'll lay my hand on't.

250

Isa. Sirrah, no more ! I see you have discover'd This love's knight errant, who hath made adventure For purchase of my love ; be silent, mute,

Mute as a statue, or his injunction
 For me enjoying, shall be to cut thy throat ;
 I'll do it, though for no other purpose ; and
 Be sure he'll not refuse it.

Lol. My share, that's all ;
 I'll have my fool's part with you.

Isa. No more ! your master.

Enter ALIBIUS.

Alib. Sweet, how dost thou ?

Isa. Your bounden servant, sir.

Alib. Fie, fie, sweetheart, 260
 No more of that.

Isa. You were best lock me up.

Alib. In my arms and bosom, my sweet Isabella,
 I'll lock thee up most nearly.—Lollo, /
 We have employment, we have task in hand :
 At noble Vermandero's, our castle['s] captain,
 There is a nuptial to be solemnis'd—
 Beatrice-Joanna, his fair daughter, bride—
 For which the gentleman hath bespoke our pains,
 A mixture of our madmen and our fools,¹ 270
 To finish, as it were, and make the fag
 Of all the revels, the third night from the first ;
 Only an unexpected passage over,
 To make a frightful pleasure, that is all,

¹ So Corax, a physician, in Ford's *Lover's Melancholy*, provides a "Masque of Melancholy," in which various forms of madness are represented, for the entertainment of Palador, Prince of Cyprus.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

SCENE IV.

An Apartment in the Castle.

Enter VERMANDERO, BEATRICE, ALSEMERO, *and*
JASPERINO.

Ver. Valencia speaks so nobly of you, sir,
I wish I had a daughter now for you.

Als. The fellow of this creature were a partner
For a king's love.

Ver. I had her fellow once, sir,
But heaven has married her to joys eternal ;
'Twere sin to wish her in this vale again.
Come, sir, your friend and you shall see the pleasures
Which my health chiefly joys in.

Als. I hear
The beauty of this seat largely [commended].

Ver. It falls much short of that.

[*Exit with* ALSEMERO *and* JASPERINO.

Beat. So, here's one step 10
Into my father's favour ; time will fix him ;
I've got him now the liberty of the house ;
So wisdom, by degrees, works out her freedom :
And if that eye be darken'd that offends me,—
I wait but that eclipse,—this gentleman
Shall soon shine glorious in my father's liking,
Through the refulgent virtue of my love.

Enter DE FLORES.

De F. My thoughts are at a banquet ; for the deed,
I feel no weight in't ; 'tis but light and cheap
For the sweet recompense that I set down for't. [*Aside.*

Beat. De Flores !

De F. Lady ?

Beat. Thy looks promise cheerfully. 21

De F. All things are answerable, time, circumstance,
Your wishes, and my service.

Beat. Is it done, then ?

De F. Piracquo is no more.

Beat. My joys start at mine eyes ;¹ our sweet'st de-
lights

Are evermore born weeping.

De F. I've a token for you.

Beat. For me ?

De F. But it was sent somewhat unwillingly ;
I could not get the ring without the finger.

[*Producing the ring and the finger.*

Beat. Bless me, what hast thou done ?

De F. Why, is that more 30
Than killing the whole man ? I cut his heart-strings :
A greedy hand thrust in a dish at court,
In a mistake hath had as much as this.

Beat. 'Tis the first token my father made me send
him.

De F. And I [have] made him send it back again

¹ See *Introduction*, p. lxiii. (footnote).

For his last token ; I was loath to leave it,
 And I'm sure dead men have no use of jewels ;
 He was as loath to part with't, for it stuck
 As if the flesh and it were both one substance.

Beat. At the stag's fall, the keeper has his fees ; 40
 'Tis soon applied, all dead men's fees are yours, sir :
 I pray, bury the finger, but the stone
 You may make use on shortly ; the true value,
 Tak't of my truth, is near three hundred ducats.

De F. 'Twill hardly buy a capcase¹ for one's con-
 science though,
 To keep it from the worm, as fine as 'tis :
 Well, being my fees, I'll take it ;
 Great men have taught me that, or else my merit
 Would scorn the way on't.

Beat. It might justly, sir ;
 Why, thou mistak'st, De Flores, 'tis not given 50
 In state of recompense.

De F. No, I hope so, lady ;
 You should soon witness my contempt to't then.

Beat. Prithee,—thou look'st as if thou wert offended.

De F. That were strange, lady ; 'tis not possible
 My service should draw such a cause from you :
 Offended ! could you think so ? that were much
 For one of my performance, and so warm
 Yet in my service.

Beat. 'Twere misery in me to give you cause,
 sir.

¹ Hand-box, portmanteau.

De F. I know so much, it were so ; misery 60
In her most sharp condition.

Beat. 'Tis resolv'd then ;
Look you, sir, here's three thousand golden florens ;¹
I have not meanly thought upon thy merit.

De F. What ! salary ? now you move me.

Beat. How, De Flores ?

De F. Do you place me in the rank of verminous
fellows,
To destroy things for wages ? offer gold
[For] the life-blood of man ? is anything
Valued too precious for my recompense ?

Beat. I understand thee not.

De F. I could ha' hir'd
A journeyman in murder at this rate, 70
And mine own conscience might have [slept at ease],²
And have had the work brought home.

Beat. I'm in a labyrinth ;
What will content him ? I'd fain be rid of him. [*Aside.*
I'll double the sum, sir.

De F. You take a course
To double my vexation, that's the good you do.

Beat. Bless me, I'm now in worse plight than I was ;
I know not what will please him. [*Aside.*].—For my
fear's sake,

I prithee, make away with all speed possible ;

¹ "Pieces first coined by the Florentines : the *florens* of Spain (according to the Dictionaries) is 4s. 4d.—Does Beatrice offer here a paper to De Flores ?"—*Dyce*, §

² The bracketed words were added by the editor of 1816.

And if thou be'st so modest not to name
 The sum that will content thee, paper blushes not, 80
 Send thy demand in writing, it shall follow thee ;
 But, prithee, take thy flight.

De F. You must fly too then.

Beat. I ?

De F. I'll not stir a foot else.

Beat. What's your meaning ?

De F. Why, are not you as guilty ? in, I'm sure, /
 As deep as I ; and we should stick together :
 Come, your fears counsel you but ill ; my absence
 Would draw suspect upon you instantly,
 There were no rescue for you.

Beat. He speaks home ! [*Aside.*

De F. Nor is it fit we two, engag'd so jointly,
 Should part and live asunder.

Beat. How now, sir ? 90
 This shows not well.

De F. What makes your lip so strange ?¹
 This must not be betwixt us.

Beat. The man talks wildly !

De F. Come, kiss me with a zeal now.

Beat. Heaven, I doubt him ! [*Aside.*

De F. I will not stand so long to beg 'em shortly.

Beat. Take heed, De Flores, of forgetfulness,
 'Twill soon betray us.

¹ CL Middleton's *Women beware Women*, iii. 1 :—

“ Speak, what's the humour, sweet,
 You make your lip so strange ? ”

De F. Take you heed first ;

Faith, you're grown much forgetful, you're to blame in't.

Beat. He's bold, and I am blam'd for't. [*Aside.*

De F. I have eas'd you

Of your trouble, think on it ; I am in pain,

And must be eas'd of you ; 'tis a charity,

100

Justice invites your blood to understand me.

Beat. I dare not.

De F. Quickly !

Beat. O, I never shall !

Speak it yet further off, that I may lose

What has been spoken, and no sound remain on't ;

I would not hear so much offence again

For such another deed.

De F. Soft, lady, soft !

The last is not yet paid for : O, this act

Has put me into spirit ; I was as greedy on't

As the parch'd earth of moisture, when the clouds weep : }

Did you not mark, I wrought myself into't, 110

Nay, sued and kneel'd for't? why was all that pains
took?

You see I've thrown contempt upon your gold ;

Not that I want it [not], for I do piteously,

In order I'll come unto't, and make use on't,

But 'twas not held so precious to begin with,

For I place wealth after the heels of pleasure ;

And were not I resolv'd in my belief

That thy virginity were perfect in thee,

I should but take my recompense with grudging,

As if I had but half my hopes I agreed for.

120

Beat. Why, 'tis impossible thou canst be so wicked,
Or shelter such a cunning cruelty,
To make his death the murderer of my honour !
Thy language is so bold and vicious,
I cannot see which way I can forgive it
With any modesty.

De F. Push !¹ you forget yourself ;
A woman dipp'd in blood, and talk of modesty !

Beat. O misery of sin ! would I'd been bound
Perpetually unto my living hate

In that Piracquo, than to hear these words ! 130
Think but upon the distance that creation
Set 'twixt thy blood and mine, and keep thee there.

De F. Look but into your conscience, read me there ;
'Tis a true book, you'll find me there your equal :

Push ! fly not to your birth, but settle you
In what the act has made you ; you're no more now.

You must forget your parentage to me ;

You are the deed's creature ; by that name

You lost your first condition, and I challenge you,

As peace and innocency has turn'd you out, 140
And made you one with me.

Beat. With thee, foul villain !

De F. Yes, my fair murderess ; do you urge me ?
Though thou writ'st maid, thou whore in thy affec-
tion ?

'Twas chang'd from thy first love, and that's a kind
Of whoredom in the² heart ; and he's chang'd now

¹ Fish.

² Old ed. "thy."

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

SCENE IV.]

The Changeling.

67

De F. [*raising her.*] Come, rise and shroud your
blushes in my bosom ;

Silence is one of pleasure's best receipts :

Thy peace is wrought for ever in this yielding.

'Las ! how the turtle pants ! thou'lt love anon

170

What thou so fear'st and faint'st to venture on.

[*Exeunt.*

ACT IV.

Dumb Show.

Enter Gentlemen, VERMANDERO meeting them with actions of wonderment at the disappearance of PIRACQUO. Enter ALSEMERO with JASPERINO and gallants: VERMANDERO points to him, the gentlemen seeming to applaud the choice. ALSEMERO, VERMANDERO, JASPERINO, and the others pass over the stage with much pomp, BEATRICE as a bride following in great state, attended by DIAPHANTA, ISABELLA, and other gentlewomen; DE FLORES after all, smiling at the accident: ALONZO'S ghost appears to him in the midst of his smile, and startles him, showing the hand whose finger he had cut off.

SCENE I.

ALSEMERO'S Apartment in the Castle.

Enter BEATRICE.

Beat. This fellow has undone me endlessly ;
 Never was bride so fearfully distress'd :
 The more I think upon th' ensuing night,

And whom I am to cope with in embraces,
 One who's¹ ennobled both in blood and mind,
 So clear in understanding,—that's my plague now—
 Before whose judgment will my fault appear
 Like malefactors' crimes before tribunals ;
 There is no hiding on't, the more I dive
 Into my own distress : how a wise man 10
 Stands for a great calamity ! there's no venturing
 Into his bed, what course soe'er I light upon,
 Without my shame, which may grow up to danger ;
 He cannot but in justice strangle me
 As I lie by him, as a cheater use me ;
 'Tis a precious craft to play with a false die
 Before a cunning gamester. Here's his closet ; ,
 The key left in't, and he abroad i' th' park ?
 Sure 'twas forgot ; I'll be so bold as look in't.

[*Opens closet.*

Bless me ! a right physician's closet 'tis, 20
 Set round with vials ; every one her mark too :
 Sure he does practise physic for his own use,
 Which may be safely call'd your great man's wisdom.
 What manuscript lies here ?

[*Reads.*] *The Book of Experiment, called Secrets in Nature:*²
 So 'tis so ;

[*Reads.*] *How to know whether a woman be with child
 or no :*

¹ Old ed. "both."

² "In *Antonii Misaldi Montuciani de Arcanis Naturæ Libelli Quatuor*, ed. tertia, 1558, 12mo, I find no passages resembling those which are read by Beatrice."—*Dyce*.

I hope I am not yet ; if he should try though !

Let me see, [*reads*] *folio forty-five*, here 'tis, 30

The leaf tuck'd down upon't, the place suspicious :

[*Reads.*] *If you would know whether a woman be with child or not, give her two spoonfuls of the white water in glass C—*

Where's that glass C ? O yonder, I see't now—

[*Reads.*] *and if she be with child, she sleeps full twelve hours after ; if not, not :*

None of that water comes into my belly ;

I'll know you from a hundred ; I could break you now,

Or turn you into milk, and so beguile 40

The master of the mystery ; but I'll look to you.

Ha ! that which is next is ten times worse :

[*Reads.*] *How to know whether a woman be a maid or not :*

If that should be applied, what would become of me ?

Belike he has a strong faith of my purity,

That never yet made proof ; but this he calls

[*Reads.*] *A merry slight,¹ but true experiment ; the author Antonius Mizaldus. Give the party you suspect the quantity of a spoonful of the water in the glass M, which, upon her that is a maid, makes three several effects ; 'twill make her incontinently² gape, then fall into a sudden sneezing, last into a violent laughing ; else, dull, heavy, and lumpish.*

Where had I been ? 53

I fear it, yet 'tis seven hours to bed-time.

Enter DIAPHANTA.

Dia. Cuds, madam, are you here ?

¹ Artifice.

² Immediately.

Beat. Seeing that wench now,
A trick comes in my mind ; 'tis a nice piece
Gold cannot purchase. [*Aside.*—I come hither, wench,
To look my lord.

Dia. Would I had such a cause
To look him too ! [*Aside.*—Why, he's i' th' park,
madam.

Beat. There let him be.

Dia. Ay, madam, let him compass 60
Whole parks and forests, as great rangers do,
At roosting-time a little lodge can hold 'em :
Earth-conquering Alexander, that thought the world
Too narrow for him, in th' end had but his pit-hole.

Beat. I fear thou art not modest, Diaphanta.

Dia. Your thoughts are so unwilling to be known,
madam !

'Tis ever the bride's fashion, towards bed-time,
To set light by her joys, as if she ow'd¹ 'em not.

Beat. Her joys ? her fears thou wouldst say.

Dia. Fear of what ?

Beat. Art thou a maid, and talk'st so to a maid ? 70
You leave a blushing business behind ;
Beshrew your heart for't !

Dia. Do you mean good sooth, madam ?

Beat. Well, if I'd thought upon the fear at first,
Man should have been unknown.

Dia. Is't possible ?

Beat. I'd² give a thousand ducats to that woman

¹ Owned.

² Old ed. " I will."

Would try what my fear were, and tell me true
To-morrow, when she gets from't; as she likes,
I might perhaps be drawn to't.

Dia. Are you in earnest?

Beat. Do you get the woman, then challenge me,
And see if I'll fly from't; but I must tell you 80
This by the way, she must be a true maid,
Else there's no trial, my fears are not her's else.

Dia. Nay, she that I would put into your hands,
madam,
Shall be a maid.

Beat. You know I should be sham'd else,
Because she lies for me.

Dia. 'Tis a strange humour!
But are you serious still? would you resign
Your first night's pleasure, and give money too?

Beat. As willingly as live.—Alas, the gold
Is but a by-bet to wedge in the honour! [*Aside.*

Dia. I do not know how the world goes abroad 90
For faith or honesty; there's both requir'd in this.
Madam, what say you to me, and stray no further?
I've a good mind, in troth, to earn your money.

Beat. You are too quick, I fear, to be a maid.

Dia. How? not a maid? nay, then you urge me,
madam;
Your honourable self is not a truer,
With all your fears upon you——

Beat. Bad enough then. [*Aside.*

Dia. Than I with all my lightsome joys about
me.

Beat. I'm glad to hear't; then you dare put your
honesty

Upon an easy trial.

Dia. Easy? anything. 100

Beat. I'll come to you straight. [*Goes to the closet.*]

Dia. She will not search me, will she,
Like the forewoman of a female jury?¹

Beat. Glass M: ay, this is it. [*Brings vial.*]—Look,
Diaphanta,

You take no worse than I do. [*Drinks.*]

Dia. And in so doing,
I will not question what it is, but take it. [*Drinks.*]

Beat. Now if th' experiment be true, 'twill praise itself,
And give me noble ease: begins already;

[*DIAPHANTA gapes.*]

There's the first symptom; and what haste it makes
To fall into the second, there by this time!

[*DIAPHANTA sneezes.*]

Most admirable secret! on the contrary, 110
It stirs not me a whit, which most concerns it. [*Aside.*]

Dia. Ha, ha, ha!

Beat. Just in all things, and in order
As if 'twere circumscrib'd; one accident
Gives way unto another. [*Aside.*]

Dia. Ha, ha, ha!

Beat. How now, wench?

¹ I suspect that there is an allusion to the examination by matrons of the notorious Countess of Essex. Very full particulars about that extraordinary inquisition will be found in Add. MS. 25, 348.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Are absent?

Tell me, and truly, how many, and who?

Ser. Antonio, sir, and Franciscus.

Ver. When did they leave the castle?

Ser. Some ten days since, sir; the one intending to Briamata,¹ th' other for Valencia.

Ver. The time accuses 'em; a charge of murder
Is brought within my castle-gate, Piracquo's murder;
I dare not answer faithfully their absence:
A strict command of apprehension
Shall pursue 'em suddenly, and either wipe
The stain off clear, or openly discover it.
Provide me wingèd warrants for the purpose.

[*Exit* Servant.

See, I am set on again.

Enter TOMASO.

Tom. I claim a brother of you.

Ver. You're too hot;
Seek him not here.

Tom. Yes, 'mongst your dearest bloods,
If my peace find no fairer satisfaction:
This is the place must yield account for him,
For here I left him; and the hasty tie
Of this snatch'd marriage gives strong testimony
Of his most certain ruin.

20

¹ "Briamata, a fair house of his [Vermandero's] ten leagues from Alicante."—Reynolds's *Triumphs of God's Revenge against Murder*, ed. 1635, p. 50.

Ver. Certain falsehood !

This is the place indeed ; his breach of faith
 Has too much marr'd both my abusèd love,
 The honourable love I reserv'd for him,
 And mock'd my daughter's joy ; the prepar'd morning
 Blush'd at his infidelity ; he left
 Contempt and scorn to throw upon those friends 30
 Whose belief hurt 'em : O, 'twas most ignoble
 To take his flight so unexpectedly,
 And throw such public wrongs on those that lov'd him !

Tom. Then this is all your answer ?

Ver. 'Tis too fair

For one of his alliance ; and I warn you
 That this place no more see you. [Exit.

Enter DE FLORES.

Tom. The best is,
 There is more ground to meet a man's revenge on.—
 Honest De Flores ?

De F. That's my name indeed.

Saw you the bride ? good sweet sir, which way took she ?

Tom. I've bless'd mine eyes from seeing such a false
 one. 40

De F. I'd fain get off, this man's not for my company,
 I smell his brother's blood when I come near him.

[*Aside.*

Tom. Come hither, kind and true one ; I remember
 My brother lov'd thee well.

De F. O, purely, dear sir !—

Methinks I'm now again a-killing on him,
He brings it so fresh to me.

[*Aside.*

Tom. Thou canst guess, sirrah—
An ' honest friend has an instinct of jealousy—
At some foul guilty person.

De F. Alas! sir,

I am so charitable, I think none
Worse than myself! you did not see the bride then? 50

Tom. I prithee, name her not: is she not wicked?

De F. No, no; a pretty, easy, 'round-pack'd sinner,
As your most ladies are, else you might think
I flatter'd her; but, sir, at no hand wicked,
Till they're so old their sins and vices² meet,
And they salute witches. I'm call'd, I think, sir.—
His company even overlays my conscience.

[*Aside and exit.*

Tom. That De Flores has a wondrous honest
heart;
He'll bring it out in time, I'm assur'd on't.
O, here's the glorious master of the day's joy! 60
'Twill³ not be long till he and I do reckon.

Enter ALSEMERO.

Sir.

Als. You're most welcome.

¹ Old ed. "One."

² "Surely the right reading is 'chins and noses.'"—*Dyce.* I should certainly have suggested the same correction myself if *Dyce* had not anticipated me.

³ Old ed. "I will."

Tom. You may call that word back,
I do not think I am, nor wish to be.

Als. 'Tis strange you found the way to this house then.

Tom. Would I'd ne'er known the cause! I'm none of
those, sir,

That come to give you joy, and swill your wine;

'Tis a more precious liquor that must lay

The fiery thirst I bring.

Als. Your words and you
Appear to me great strangers.

Tom. Time and our swords
May make us more acquainted; this the business. 70

I should have [had] a brother in your place;

How treachery and malice have dispos'd of him,

I'm bound to inquire of him which holds his right,

Which never could come fairly.

Als. You must look
To answer for that word, sir.

Tom. Fear you not,
I'll have it ready drawn at our next meeting.
Keep your day solemn; farewell, I disturb it not;
I'll bear the smart with patience for a time. [Exit.

Als. 'Tis somewhat ominous this; a quarrel enter'd
Upon this day; my innocence relieves me, 80

Enter JASPERINO.

I should be wondrous sad else.—Jasperino,
I've news to tell thee, strange news.

Jasp. I ha' some too,
I think as strange as yours: would I might keep

Mine, so my faith and friendship might be kept in't I
Faith, sir, dispense a little with my zeal,
And let it cool in this.

Als. This puts me on,
And blames thee for thy slowness.

Jas. All may prove nothing,
Only a friendly fear that leapt from me, sir.

Als. No question, 't may prove nothing ; let's partake
it though.

Jas. 'Twas Diaphanta's chance—for to that wench go
I pretend ¹ honest love, and she deserves it—
To leave me in a back part of the house,
A place we chose for private conference ;
She was no sooner gone, but instantly
I heard your bride's voice in the next room to me ;
And lending more attention, found De Flores
Louder than she.

Als. De Flores ! thou art out now.

Jas. You'll tell me more anon.

Als. Still I'll prevent ² thee,
The very sight of him is poison to her.

Jas. That made me stagger too ; but Diaphanta 100
At her return confirm'd it.

Als. Diaphanta I

Jas. Then fell we both to listen, and words pass'd
Like those that challenge interest in a woman.

Als. Peace ; quench thy zeal, 'tis dangerous to thy
bosom.

¹ Offer.

² Anticipate.

Jas. Then truth is full of peril.

Als. Such truths are.

O, were she the sole glory of the earth,
Had eyes that could shoot fire into kings' breasts,
And touch'd,¹ she sleeps not here! yet I have time,
Though night be near, to be resolv'd hereof;
And, prithee, do not weigh me by my passions. 110

Jas. I never weigh'd friend so.

Als. Done charitably!

That key will lead thee to a pretty secret, [*Giving key.*
By a Chaldean taught me, and I have
My study upon some: bring from my closet
A glass inscrib'd there with the letter M,
And question not my purpose.

Jas. It shall be done, sir. [*Exit.*

Als. How can this hang together? not an hour since
Her woman came pleading her lady's fears,
Deliver'd her for the most timorous virgin
That ever shrunk at man's name, and so modest, 120
She charg'd her weep out her request to me,
That she might come obscurely to my bosom.

Enter BEATRICE.

Beat. All things go well; my woman's preparing
yonder

For her sweet voyage, which grieves me to lose;
Necessity compels it; I lose all else. [*Aside.*

¹ Stained.

Als. Push! modesty's shrine is set in yonder forehead: I cannot be too sure though. [*Aside.*]—My Joanna!

Beat. Sir, I was bold to weep a message to you; Pardon my modest fears.

Als. The dove's not meeker; She's abus'd, questionless. [*Aside.*]

Re-enter JASPERINO with vial.

O, are you come, sir? 130

Beat. The glass, upon my life! I see the letter.

[*Aside.*]

Jas. Sir, this is M.

[*Giving vial.*]

Als. 'Tis it.

Beat. I am suspected.

[*Aside.*]

Als. How fitly our bride comes to partake with us!

Beat. What is't, my lord?

Als. No hurt.

Beat. Sir, pardon me, I seldom taste of any composition.

Als. But this, upon my warrant, you shall venture on.

Beat. I fear 'twill make me ill.

Als. Heaven forbid that.

Beat. I'm put now to my cunning: th' effects I know, If I can now but feign 'em handsomely.

[*Aside, then drinks.*]

Als. It has that secret virtue, it ne'er miss'd, sir, 140 Upon a virgin.

Jas. Treble-qualified? [BEATRICE gapes and sneezes.]

Als. By all that's virtuous it takes there! proceeds!

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

chambermaid to the Knight of the Sun, at the sign of Scorpio, in the middle region, sent by the bellows-mender of Aeolus. Pray the post. 12

Lol. This is stark madness !

Isa. Now mark the inside.

[*Reads.*] *Sweet lady, having now cast off this counterfeit cover of a madman, I appear to your best judgment a true and faithful lover of your beauty.*

Lol. He is mad still.

Isa. [*reads.*] *If any fault you find, chide those perfections in you which have made me imperfect ; 'tis the same sun that causeth to grow and enforceth to wither—* 22

Lol. O rogue !

Isa. [*reads.*] *Shapes and transhapes, destroys and builds again : I come in winter to you, dismantled of my proper ornaments ; by the sweet splendour of your cheerful smiles, I spring and live a lover.*

Lol. Mad rascal still !

Isa. [*reads.*] *Tread him not under foot, that shall appear an honour to your bounties. I remain—mad till I speak with you, from whom I expect my cure, yours all, or one beside himself, FRANCISCUS.* 31

Lol. You are like to have a fine time on't ; my master and I may give over our professions ; I do not think but you can cure fools and madmen faster than we, with little pains too.

Isa. Very likely.

Lol. One thing I must tell you, mistress ; you perceive that I am privy to your skill ; if I find you minister once,

and set up the trade, I put in for my thirds ; I shall be mad or fool else. 40

Isa. The first place is thine, believe it, Lollo, If I do fall.

Lol. I fall upon you.

Isa. So.

Lol. Well, I stand to my venture.

Isa. But thy counsel now ; how shall I deal with 'em ?

Lol. Why,¹ do you mean to deal with 'em ?

Isa. Nay, the fair² understanding, how to use 'em.

Lol. Abuse 'em ! that's the way to mad the fool, and make a fool of the madman, and then you use 'em kindly.

Isa. 'Tis easy, I'll practise ; do thou observe it,
The key of thy wardrobe. 50

Lol. There [*gives key*] ; fit yourself for 'em, and I'll fit 'em both for you.

Isa. Take thou no further notice than the outside.

Lol. Not an inch [*Exit ISABELLA*] ; I'll put you to the inside.

Enter ALIBIUS.

Alib. Lollo, art there ? will all be perfect, think'st thou ?

To-morrow night, as if to close up the Solemnity, Vermandero expects us.

Lol. I mistrust the madmen most ; the fools will do well enough ; I have taken pains with them. 60

¹ Old ed. "We."

² "i.e., Nay, understand my speeches in the fair and modest sense in which they are uttered."—Editor of 1816.

Alib. Tush ! they cannot miss ; the more absurdity,
The more commends it, so no rough behaviours
Affright the ladies ; they're nice things, thou knowest.

Lol. You need not fear, sir ; so long as we are there
with our commanding pizzles, they'll be as tame as the
ladies themselves.

Alib. I'll see them once more rehearse before they go.

Lol. I was about it, sir : look you to the madmen's
morriss, and let me alone with the other : there is one or
two that I mistrust their footing ;¹ I'll instruct them, and
then they shall rehearse the whole measure. 71

Alib. Do so ; I'll see the music prepar'd : but, Lollo,
By the way, how does my wife brook her restraint ?
Does she not grudge at it ?

Lol. So, so ; she takes some pleasure in the house,
she would abroad else ; you must allow her a little more
length, she's kept too short.

Alib. She shall along to Vermandero's with us,
That will serve her for a month's liberty.

Lol. What's that on your face, sir ? 80

Alib. Where, Lollo ? I see nothing.

Lol. Cry you mercy, sir, 'tis your nose ; it showed like
the trunk of a young elephant.

Alib. Away, rascal ! I'll prepare the music, Lollo.

Lol. Do, sir, and I'll dance the whilst. [*Exit ALIBIUS.*]
—Tony, where art thou, Tony ?

Old ed. "fooling"—and so Dyce. But cf. l. 88.

"Come, Tony, the *footmanship* I taught you."

Enter ANTONIO.

Ant. Here, cousin ; where art thou ?

Lol. Come, Tony, the footmanship I taught you.

Ant. I had rather ride, cousin. 89

Dol. Ay, a whip take you ! but I'll keep you out ;
vault in : look you, Tony ; fa, la, la, la, la. [*Dances.*

Ant. Fa, la, la, la, la. [*Sings and dances.*

Lol. There, an honour.

Ant. Is this an honour, coz ?

Lol. Yes, and it please your worship.

Ant. Does honour bend in the hams, coz ?

Lol. Marry does it, as low as worship, squireship,
nay, yeomanry itself sometimes, from whence it first
stiffened : there rise, a caper.

Ant. Caper after an honour, coz ? 100

Lol. Very proper, for honour is but a caper, rise[s]
as fast and high, has a knee or two, and falls to th'
ground again : you can remember your figure, Tony ?

Ant. Yes, cousin ; when I see thy figure, I can re-
member mine. [*Exit LOLLIO.*

Re-enter ISABELLA, dressed as a madwoman.

Isa. Hey, how he¹ treads the air ! shough, shough,
t'other way ! he burns his wings else : here's wax enough
below, Icarus, more than will be cancelled these eigh-
teen moons : he's down, he's down ! what a terrible fall
he had !

110

¹ Old ed. "she."

Stand up, thou son of Cretan Dædalus,
And let us tread the lower labyrinth ;
I'll bring thee to the clue.

Ant. Prithee, coz, let me alone.

Isa. Art thou not drown'd ?

About thy head I saw a heap of clouds
Wrapt like a turkish turbant ; on thy back
A crook'd chameleon-colour'd rainbow hung
Like a tiara down unto thy hams :

Let me suck out those billows in thy belly ;

Hark, how they roar and rumble in the straits !¹ 120

Bless thee from the pirates !

Ant. Pox upon you, let me alone !

Isa. Why shouldst thou mount so high as Mercury,
Unless thou hadst reversion of his place ?

Stay in the moon with me, Endymion,

And we will rule these wild rebellious waves,

That would have drown'd my love.

Ant. I'll kick thee, if

Again thou touch me, thou wild unshapen antic ;

I am no fool, you bedlam !

Isa. But you are, as sure as I am mad : 130

Have I put on this habit of a frantic,

With love as full of fury, to beguile

The nimble eye of watchful jealousy,

And am I thus rewarded ?

Ant. Ha ! dearest beauty !

Isa. No, I have no beauty now,

¹ Old ed. " streets."

Nor never had but what was in my garments :
 You a quick-sighted lover ! come not near me :
 Keep your caparisons, you're aptly clad ;
 I came a feigner, to return stark mad.

Ant. Stay, or I shall change condition, 140
 And become as you are. [Exit ISABELLA.]

Re-enter LOLLIO.

Lol. Why, Tony, whither now ? why, fool——

Ant. Whose fool, usher of idiots ? you coxcomb !
 I have fool'd too much.

Lol. You were best be mad another while then.

Ant. So I am, stark mad ; I have cause enough ;
 And I could throw the full effects on thee,
 And beat thee like a fury. 148

Lol. Do not, do not ; I shall not forbear the gentleman under the fool, if you do : alas ! I saw through your fox-skin before now ! Come, I can give you comfort ; my mistress loves you ; and there is as arrant a mad-man i' th' house as you are a fool, your rival, whom she loves not : if after the masque we can rid her of him, you earn her love, she says, and the fool shall ride her.

Ant. May I believe thee ?

Lol. Yes, or you may choose whether you will or no.

Ant. She's eas'd of him ; I've a good quarrel on't.

Lol. Well, keep your old station yet, and be quiet. 159

Ant. Tell her I will deserve her love. [Exit.]

Lol. And you are like to have your desire.¹

¹ "Qy. 'desert'?"—Dyce.

Enter FRANCISCUS.

FRAN. [sings.] *Down, down, down a-down a-down,—*
and then with a horse-trick¹

To kick Latona's forehead, and break her bowstring.

LAL. This is t'other counterfeit; I'll put him out of
 his humour. [*Aside. Takes out a letter and reads.*] *Sweet*
lady, having now cast [off] this counterfeit cover of a
maiden, I appear to your best judgment a true and faith-
ful lover of your beauty. This is pretty well for a mad-
~~man~~

FRAN. Ha! what's that? 170

LAL. [*reads*] *Chide those perfections in you which [have]*
~~made me imperfect.~~

FRAN. I am discover'd to the fool.

LAL. I hope to discover the fool in you ere I have
 done with you. [*Reads*] *Yours all, or one beside him*
~~of the name.~~ *This madman will mend me.*

FRAN. What do you read, sirrah?

LAL. *The destiny, sir; you'll be hang'd for this trick,*
~~and another that I know.~~

FRAN. *Am I then of counsel with thy mistress?* 180

LAL. *Yes, but you are a fool.*

FRAN. *Give me thy hand.*

LAL. *Why, is not your hand in my pocket now [pulling]*
~~it out and his pocket]: your hand is empty is it not? is~~

¹ *See the note on p. 170.*

² *Hand.*

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Enter ALIBIUS.

Alib. Well said : in a readiness, Lollio ?

Lol. Yes, sir.

Alib. Away then, and guide them in, Lollio :
Entreat your mistress to see this sight.
Hark, is there not one incurable fool
That might be begg'd ?¹ I have friends.

Lol. I have him for you,
One that shall deserve it too.

[*Exit.*

Re-enter ISABELLA : *then re-enter* LOLLIO *with the*
madmen and fools, who dance.

Alib. Good boy, Lollio !

220

'Tis perfect : well, fit but once these strains,
We shall have coin and credit for our pains.

[*Exeunt.*

¹ " *To beg a person for a fool, to apply to be his guardian.* In the old common law was a writ *de idiota inquirendo*, under which, if a man was legally proved an idiot, the profits of his lands and the custody of his person might be granted by the king to any subject. See Blackstone, B. i. ch. 8, § 18."—*Nares.*

ACT V.

SCENE I.

A Gallery in the Castle.

Enter BEATRICE : a clock strikes one.

Beat. One struck, and yet she lies by't ! O my fears !
This strumpet serves her own ends, 'tis apparent now,
Devours the pleasure with a greedy appetite,
And never minds my honour or my peace,
Makes havoc of my right ; but she pays dearly for't ;
No trusting of her life with such a secret,
That cannot rule her blood to keep her promise ;
Beside, I've some suspicion of her faith to me,
Because I was suspected of my lord,
And it must come from her [*clock strikes two*] : hark ! by
my horrors, 10
Another clock strikes two !

Enter DE FLORES.

De F. Pist !¹ where are you ?

Beat. De Flores ?

De F. Ay: is she not come from him yet?

Beat. As I'm a living soul, not!

De F. Sure the devil

Hath sow'd his itch within her; who would trust
A waiting-woman?

Beat. I must trust somebody.

De F. Push!¹ they're termagants;
Especially when they fall upon their masters
And have their ladies' first-fruits; they're mad whelps,
You cannot stave 'em off from game royal: then
You are so rash² and hardy, ask no counsel; 20
And I could have help'd you to a 'pothecary's daughter
Would have fall'n off before eleven, and thank['d] you
too.

Beat. O me, not yet! this whore forgets herself.

De F. The rascal fares so well: look, you're undone;
The day-star, by this hand! see, Phosphorus plain yonder.

Beat. Advise me now to fall upon some ruin;
There is no counsel safe else.

De F. Peace! I ha't now,
For we must force a rising, there's no remedy.

Beat. How? take heed of that.

De F. Tush! be you quiet, or else give over all. 30

Beat. Prithee, I ha' done then.

De F. This is my reach: I'll set
Some part a-fire of Diaphanta's chamber.

Beat. How? fire, sir? that may endanger the whole
house.

¹ Pish.

² Old ed. "harsh."

De F. You talk of danger when your fame's on fire?

Beat. That's true; do what thou wilt now.

De F. Push! I aim

At a most rich success strikes all dead sure:

The chimney being a-fire, and some light parcels

Of the least danger in her chamber only,

If Diaphanta should be met by chance then

Far from her lodging, which is now suspicious,

40

It would be thought her fears and affrights then

Drove her to seek for succour; if not seen

Or met at all, as that's the likeliest,

For her own shame she'll hasten towards her lodging;

I will be ready with a piece high-charg'd,

As 'twere to cleanse the chimney, there 'tis proper

now,

But she shall be the mark.

Beat. I'm forc'd to love thee now,

'Cause thou provid'st so carefully for my honour.

De F. 'Slid, it concerns the safety of us both,
Our pleasure and continuance.

Beat. One word now, prithee;
How for the servants?

50

De F. I will despatch them,
Some one way, some another in the hurry,
For buckets, hooks, ladders; fear not you,
The deed shall find its time; and I've thought since
Upon a safe conveyance for the body too:
How this fire purifies wit! watch you your minute.

Beat. Fear keeps my soul upon't, I cannot stray
from't.

Enter Ghost of ALONZO.

De F. Ha ! what art thou that tak'st away the light
Betwixt that star and me ? I dread thee not : 59
'Twas but a mist of conscience ; all's clear again. [*Exit.*

Beat. Who's that, De Flores ? bless me, it slides by !

[*Exit Ghost.*

Some ill thing haunts the house ; 't has left behind it
A shivering sweat upon me ; I'm afraid now :

This night hath been so tedious ! O this strumpet !

Had she a thousand lives, he should not leave her

Till he had destroy'd the last. List ! O my terrors !

[*Clock strikes three.*

Three struck by St. Sebastian's !

Voices [within]. Fire, fire, fire ! -

Beat. Already ? how rare is that man's speed !

How heartily he serves me ! his face loathes one ;

But look upon his care, who would not love him ? 70

The east is not more beauteous than his service.

Voices [within]. Fire, fire, fire !

Re-enter DE FLORES : Servants pass over the stage.

De F. Away, despatch ! hooks, buckets, ladders ! that's
well said. [*Bell rings within.*

The fire-bell rings ; the chimney works, my charge ;

The piece is ready. [*Exit.*

Beat. Here's a man worth loving !

Enter DIAPHANTA.

O you're a jewel !

Dia. Pardon frailty, madam ;

In troth, I was so well, I even forgot myself.

Beat. You've made trim work !

Dia. What ?

Beat. Hie quickly to your chamber ;

Your reward follows you.

Dia. I never made

So sweet a bargain.

[*Exit.*

Enter ALSEMERO.

Als. O, my dear Joanna,

80

Alas ! art thou risen too ? I was coming,

My absolute treasure !

Beat. When I miss'd you,

I could not choose but follow.

Als. Thou'rt all sweetness :

The fire is not so dangerous.

Beat. Think you so, sir ?

Als. I prithee, tremble not ; believe me, 'tis not.

Enter VERMANDERO *and* JASPERINO.

Ver. O bless my house and me !

Als. My lord your father.

Re-enter DE FLORES *with a gun.*

Ver. Knave, whither goes that piece ?

De F. To scour the chimney.

Ver. O, well said, well said ! [*Exit DE FLORES.*
That fellow's good on all occasions.

Beat. A wondrous necessary man, my lord. 90

Ver. He hath a ready wit ; he's worth 'em all, sir ;
Dog at a house of fire ; I ha' seen him sing'd ere now.—

[*Gun fired off within.*

Ha, there he goes !

Beat. 'Tis done ! [*Aside.*

Als. Come, sweet, to bed now ;
Alas ! thou wilt get cold.

Beat. Alas ! the fear keeps that out !
My heart will find no quiet till I hear
How Diaphanta, my poor woman, fares ;
It is her chamber, sir, her lodging chamber.

Ver. How should the fire come there ?

Beat. As good a soul as ever lady countenanc'd,
But in her chamber negligent and heavy : 100
She 'scap'd a mine twice.

Ver. Twice ?

Beat. Strangely twice, sir.

Ver. Those sleepy sluts are dangerous in a house,
And they be ne'er so good.

Re-enter DE FLORES.

De F. O poor virginity,
Thou hast paid dearly for't !

Ver. Bless us, what's that ?

De F. A thing you all knew once, Diaphanta's burnt.

Beat. My woman ! O my woman !

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

De F. Rewarded? precious! here's a trick beyond
me:

I see in all bouts, both of sport and wit,
Always a woman strives for the last hit.

[*Exit.*

SCENE II.

Another Apartment in the Castle.

Enter TOMASO.

Tom. I cannot taste the benefits of life
With the same relish I was wont to do:
Man I grow weary of, and hold his fellowship
A treacherous bloody friendship; and because
I'm ignorant in whom my wrath should settle,
I must think all men villains, and the next
I meet, whoe'er he be, the murderer
Of my most worthy brother. Ha! what's he?

DE FLORES passes over the stage.

O, the fellow that some call honest De Flores;
But methinks honesty was hard bested
To come here for a lodging; as if a queen
Should make her palace of a pest-house:
I find a contrariety in nature
Betwixt that face and me; the least occasion
Would give me game upon him; yet he's so foul
One would scarce touch [him] with a sword he lov'd
And made account of; so most deadly venomous,

He would go near to poison any weapon
 That should draw blood on him ; one must resolve
 Never to use that sword again in fight 20
 In way of honest manhood that strikes him ;
 Some river must devour it ; 'twere not fit
 That any man should find it. What, again ?

Re-enter DE FLORES.

He walks a' purpose by, sure, to choke me up,
 T' infect my blood.

De F. My worthy noble lord !

Tom. Dost offer to come near and breathe upon me ?
[*Strikes him.*

De F. A blow ! [*Draws.*

Tom. Yea, are you so prepar'd ?
 I'll rather like a soldier die by th' sword,
 Than like a politician by thy poison. [*Draws.*

De F. Hold, my lord, as you are honourable ! 30.

Tom. All slaves that kill by poison are still cowards.

De F. I cannot strike ; I see his brother's wounds
 Fresh bleeding in his eye, as in a crystal.— [*Aside.*

I will not question this, I know you're noble ;
 I take my injury with thanks given, sir,

Like a wise lawyer, and as a favour
 Will wear it for the worthy hand that gave it.—

Why this from him that yesterday appear'd
 So strangely loving to me ?

O, but instinct is of a subtler strain ! 40

Guilt must not walk so near his lodge again ;

He came near me now: [*Aside and exit.*

Tom. All league with mankind I renounce for ever,
Till I find this murderer; not so much
As common courtesy but I'll lock up;
For in the state of ignorance I live in,
A brother may salute his brother's murderer,
And wish good speed to th' villain in a greeting.

Enter VERMANDERO, ALIBIUS, and ISABELLA.

Ver. Noble Piracquo!

Tom. Pray, keep on your way, sir;
I've nothing to say to you.

Ver. Comforts bless you, sir! 50

Tom. I've forsworn compliment, in troth I have, sir;
As you are merely man, I have not left
A good wish for you, nor [for] any here.

Ver. Unless you be so far in love with grief,
You will not part from't upon any terms,
We bring that news will make a welcome for us.

Tom. What news can that be?

Ver. Throw no scornful smile
Upon the zeal I bring you, 'tis worth more, sir;
Two of the chiefest men I kept about me
I hide not from the law of your just vengeance. 60

Tom.

Ver. To give your peace more ample satisfaction,
Thank these discoverers.

Tom. If you bring that calm,
Name but the manner I shall ask forgiveness in
For that contemptuous smile [I threw] upon you,

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

SCENE III

ALSEMERO'S APARTMENT IN THE CITY

Enter ALSEMERO and BEATRICE

Al. Your confidence, I'm sure, is not of great
The prospect from the garden has shown
Enough for deep suspicion.

Al. The back walk
That so continually was worn upon
Condemns the fact for ugly can't be seen,
Her despite to him, and so seeming detraction.

Al. Touch it home then; 'tis not a shallow probe
Can search this ulcer soundly; I fear you'll find it
Full of corruption: 'tis fit I leave you,
She meets you opportunely from that walk;
She took the back door at his parting with her. [Exit

Al. Did my fate wait for this unhappy stroke
At my first sight of woman? She is here.

Enter BEATRICE

Beat. Alsemero!

Al. How do you?

Beat. How do I?

Alas, [sir]! how do you? you look not well.

Al. You read me well enough, I am not well.

Beat. Not well, sir? is't in my power to better you?

Al. Yes.

Beat. Nay, then you're cur'd again.

Als. Pray, resolve me one question, lady. 20

Beat. If I can.

Als. None can so sure: are you honest?

Beat. Ha, ha, ha! that's a broad question, my lord.

Als. But that's not a modest answer, my lady:
Do you laugh? my doubts are strong upon me.

Beat. 'Tis innocence that smiles, and no rough brow
Can take away the dimple in her cheek:
Say I should strain a tear to fill the vault,
Which would you give the better faith to?

Als. 'Twere but hypocrisy of a sadder colour,
But the same stuff; neither your smiles nor tears
Shall move or flatter me from my belief: 30

You are a whore!

Beat. What a horrid sound it hath!
It blasts a beauty to deformity;
Upon what face soever that breath falls,
It strikes it ugly: O, you have ruin'd
What you can ne'er repair again!

Als. I'll all
Demolish, and seek out truth within you,
If there be any left; let your sweet tongue
Prevent your heart's rifling; there I'll ransack
And tear out my suspicion.

Beat. You may, sir; 40
It is an easy passage; yet, if you please,
Show me the ground whereon you lost your love;
My spotless virtue may but tread on that
Before I perish.

Als. Unanswerable;

A ground you cannot stand on ; you fall down
 Beneath all grace and goodness when you set
 Your ticklish heel on it : there was a visor
 Over that cunning face, and that became you ;
 Now impudence in triumph rides upon't ;
 How comes this tender reconciliation else 50
 Twixt you and your despite, your rancorous loathing,
 De Flores? he that your eye was sore at sight of,
 He's now become your arm's supporter, your
 Lip's saint !

Beat. Is there the cause ?

Als. Worse, your lust's devil,
 Your adultery !

Beat. Would any but yourself say that,
 'Twould turn him to a villain !

Als. It was witness'd
 By the counsel of your bosom, Diaphanta.

Beat. Is your witness dead then ?

Als. 'Tis to be fear'd
 It was the wages of her knowledge ; poor soul,
 She liv'd not long after the discovery. 60

Beat. Then hear a story of not much less horror
 Than this your false suspicion is beguil'd with ;
 To your bed's scandal I stand up innocence,
 Which even the guilt of one black other deed
 Will stand for proof of ; your love has made me
A cruel murderess.

Als. Ha !

Beat. A bloody one ;
 I have kiss'd poison for it, strok'd a serpent :

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

De F. Noble Alsemero !

Als. I can tell you

News, sir ; my wife has her commended to you.

De F. That's news indeed, my lord ; I think she
would

Commend me to the gallows if she could,
She ever loved me so well ; I thank her.

Als. What's this blood upon your band, De Flores ?

De F. Blood ! no, sure 'twas wash'd since.

Als. Since when, man ?

De F. Since t'other day I got a knock
In a sword-and-dagger school ; I think 'tis out.

Als. Yes, 'tis almost out, but 'tis perceiv'd though. 100
I had forgot my message ; this it is,

What price goes murder ?

De F. How, sir ?

Als. I ask you, sir ;
My wife's behindhand with you, she tells me,
For a brave bloody blow you gave for her sake
Upon Piracquo.

De F. Upon ? 'twas quite through him sure :
Has she confess'd it ?

Als. As sure as death to both of you ;
And much more than that.

De F. It could not be much more ;
'Twas but one thing, and that—she is a whore.

Als. I[t] could not choose but follow : O cunning
devils !

How should blind men know you from fair-fac'd saints ?

Beat. [within.] He lies ! the villain does belie me ! 111

De F. Let me go to her, sir.

Als. Nay, you shall to her.—

Peace, crying crocodile, your sounds are heard ;

Take your prey to you ;—get you in to her, sir :

[*Exit DE FLORES into closet.*

I'll be your pander now ; rehearse again

Your scene of lust, that you may be perfect

When you shall come to act it to the black audience,

Where howls and gnashings shall be music to you :

Clip¹ your adulteress freely, 'tis the pilot

Will guide you to the *mare mortuum*,

120

Where you shall sink to fathoms bottomless.

*Enter VERMANDERO, TOMASO, ALIBIUS, ISABELLA,
FRANCISCUS, and ANTONIO.*

Ver. O Alsemero ! I've a wonder for you.

Als. No, sir, 'tis I, I have a wonder for you.

Ver. I have suspicion near as proof itself
For Piracquo's murder.

Als. Sir, I have proof
Beyond suspicion for Piracquo's murder.

Ver. ~~Beseech you, hear me ; these who have been
disguis'd~~

E'er since the deed was done.

Als. I have two other
That were more close disguis'd ~~than your two could be~~
E'er since the deed was done.

130

Ver. You'll hear me—these mine own servants——

¹ Embrace.

Als. Hear me—those nearer than your servants
That shall acquit them, and prove them guiltless.

Fran. That may be done with easy truth, sir.

Tom. How is my cause bandied through your delays !
'Tis urgent in [my] blood, and calls for haste ;
Give me a brother [or] alive or dead ;
Alive, a wife with him ; if dead, for both
A recompense, for murder and adultery.

Beat. [*within.*] O, O, O ! — -

140

Als. Hark ! 'tis coming to you.

De F. [*within.*] Nay, I'll along for company.

Beat. [*within.*] O, O !

Ver. What horrid sounds are these ?

Als. Come forth, you twins
Of mischief !

Re-enter DE FLORES, dragging in BEATRICE wounded.

De F. Here we are ; if you have any more
To say to us, speak quickly, I shall not
Give you the hearing else ; I am so stout yet,
And so, I think, that broken rib of mankind.

Ver. An host of enemies enter'd my citadel 150
Could not amaze like this : Joanna ! Beatrice ! Joanna !

Beat. O, come not near me, sir, I shall defile you !
I am that of your blood was taken from you
For your better health ; look no more upon't,
But cast it to the ground regardlessly,
Let the common sewer take it from distinction :
Beneath the stars, upon yon meteor.

[*Pointing to DE FLORES.*

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

I would not go to leave thee far behind. [Dies. 180

Beat. Forgive me, Alsemero, all forgive!

'Tis time to die when 'tis a shame to live. [Dies.

Ver. O, my name's enter'd now in that record
Where till this fatal hour 'twas never read.

Als. Let it be blotted out; let your heart lose it,
And it can never look you in the face,
Nor tell a tale behind the back of life
To your dishonour; justice hath so right
The guilty hit, that innocence is quit
By proclamation, and may joy again.—

Sir, you are sensible of what truth hath done;
'Tis the best comfort that your grief can find.

Tom. Sir, I am satisfied; my injuries
Lie dead before me; I can exact no more,
Unless my soul were loose, and could o'ertake
Those black fugitives that are fled from hence,¹
To take a second vengeance; but there are wraths
Deeper than mine, 'tis to be fear'd, about 'em.

Als. What an opacous body had that moon
That last chang'd on us! here is beauty chang'd
To ugly whoredom; here servant-obedience
To a master-sin, imperious murder;
I, a supposed husband, chang'd embraces
With wantonness,—but that was paid before.—
Your change is come too, from an ignorant wrath
To knowing friendship.—Are there any more on's?

Ans. Yes, sir, I was changed too from a little ass as I

¹ Old ed. "thence."

was to a great fool as I am ; and had like to ha' been
 changed to the gallows, but that you know my innocence¹
always excuses me. * 210

Fran. I was chang'd from a little wit to be stark mad,
 Almost for the same purpose.

Isa. Your change is still behind,
 But deserve best your transformation :
 You are a jealous coxcomb, keep schools of folly,
 And teach your scholars how to break your own head.

Alib. I see all apparent, wife, and will change now.
 Into a better husband, and ne'er keep
 Scholars that shall be wiser than myself.

Als. Sir, you have yet a son's duty living, 220
 Please you, accept it ; let that your sorrow,
 As it goes from your eye, go from your heart,
 Man and his sorrow at the grave must part.²—
 All we can do to comfort one another, §
 To stay a brother's sorrow for a brother,
 To dry a child from the kind father's eyes,
 Is to no purpose, it rather multiplies :
 Your only smiles have power to cause re-live
 The dead again, or in their rooms to give
 Brother a new brother, father a child ; 230
 If these appear, all griefs are reconcil'd.

[*Exeunt omnes.*]

¹ (1) Guiltlessness, (2) idiocy.

² The lines that follow are printed on a separate page in the old ed., with the heading *Epilogue* and prefix *Als.*



THE SPANISH GIPSY.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

The Spanish Gipsie. As it was Acted (with great Applause) at the Privet House in Drury-Lane, and Salisbury Court.

Written by { *Thomas Middleton*
 and
 William Rowley } *Gent.*

Never Printed before. London, Printed by J. G. for Richard Marriot in St. Dunstons Church-yard, Fleetstreet, 1653. 4to.

Another ed. appeared in 1661. 4to.

The Spanish Gipsy is included in the 4th vol. of *A Continuation of Dodsley's Old Plays*, 1816.

A "Note of such playes as were acted at court in 1623 and 1624," in Sir Henry Herbert's office-book, records: "Upon the fifth of November att Whitehall, the prince being there only, *The Gipsye*, by the Cockpitt company."—Malone's *Shakespeare*, ed. 1821, vol. iii. p. 227.

The plot is founded on two stories of Cervantes,—(1) *La Fuerze de la Sangre*, (2) *La Gitania*.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

FERNANDO DE AZEVIDA, *corregidor of Madrid.*

PEDRO DE CORTES,
FRANCISCO DE CARCOMO, } *two old Dons.*

RODERIGO, *son to Fernando.*

LOUIS DE CASTRO.

DIEGO, *his friend.*

JOHN, *son to Francisco.*

SANCHO, *a foolish gentleman and ward to Pedro.*

SOTO, *a merry fellow, his man.*

ALVAREZ DE CASTILLA, *an old lord disguised as the father of the
gipsies.*

CARLO,
ANTONIO, } *disguised as gipsies.*
and others, }
Servants.

MARIA, *wife to Pedro.*

CLARA, *their daughter.*

GUIAMARA, *wife to Alvarez and sister to Fernando, disguised as the
mother of the gipsies, and called by the name of Eugenia.*

CONSTANZA, *daughter to Fernando, disguised as a young Spanish
gipsy, and called by the name of Pretiosa.*

CHRISTIANA, *a gentlewoman disguised as a gipsy.*

CARDOCHIA, *a young hostess to the gipsies.*

Scene, MADRID¹ and its neighbourhood.

¹ Old eds. "The Scene, Allegant" [*i.e.* Alicant].

THE SPANISH GIPSY.



ACT I.

SCENE I.

The Neighbourhood of Madrid.

Enter RODERIGO, LOUIS, *and* DIEGO.

Louis. Roderigo!

Diego. Art mad?

Rod. Yes, not so much with wine : it's as rare to see a Spaniard¹ a drunkard as a German sober, an Italian no whoremonger, an Englishman to pay his debts. 'I am no borachio ;² sack, malaga, nor canary breeds the calenture in my brains ; mine eye mads me, not my cups.

¹ Dekker in *A Strange Horse Race*, 1613, bears strong testimony to the temperance of Spaniards :—“The next contenders that followed these were an English Knight and a Spanish : the Don was a temperate and very little feeder, and no drinker, *as all Spaniards are* ; the Knight had been dubbed only for his valour in that service. . . . The Diego was a dapper fellow, of a free mind and a fair, bounteous of his purse, but sparing in his cups, as scorning to make his belly a wine-cellar.”—*Non-Dramatic Works*, ed. Grosart, iii. 338–339.

² Drunkard. Literally a Spanish term for a bottle made of skins.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Louis. Nay, not any ; her father, if he be¹ her father, may be noble.

Rod. I am as noble.

Louis. Would the adventure were so !

Rod. Stand close, they come.

Enter PEDRO, MARIA, and CLARA.

Ped. 'Tis late ; would we were in Madrill !²

40

Mar. Go faster, my lord.

Ped. Clara, keep close.

[*LOUIS and DIEGO hold PEDRO and MARIA, while RODERIGO seizes CLARA.*

Cla. Help, help, help !

Rod. Are you crying out ? I'll be your midwife.

[*Exit, bearing off CLARA.*

Ped. What mean you, gentlemen ?

Mar. Villains ! thieves ! murderers !

Ped. Do you [not] know me ? I am De Cortes, Pedro de Cortes.

Louis. De Cortes ?—Diego, come away.

[*Exit with DIEGO.*

Ped. Clara !—where is my daughter ?

Mar. Clara !—these villains
Have robb'd us of our comfört, and will, I fear,
Her of her honour.

Ped. This had not wont to be
Our Spanish fashion ; but now our gallants,

¹ Omitted in ed. 1.

² Old form of Madrid.

Our gentry, our young dons, heated with wine,—
 A fire our countrymen do seldom sit at,—
 Commit these outrages.—Clara!—Maria,
 Let's homeward; I will raise Madrill to find
 These traitors to all goodness.—Clara!

Mar. Clara!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.

Another Place in the Neighbourhood of Madrid.

Enter LOUIS and DIEGO.

Louis. O Diego, I am lost, I am mad!

Diego. So we are all.

Louis. 'Tis not with wine; I'm drunk with too much
 horror,

Inflam'd with rage, to see us two made bawds
 To Roderigo's lust: did not the old man
 Name De Cortes, Pedro de Cortes?

Diego. Sure he did.

Louis. O Diego, as thou lov'st me, nay, on the forfeit
 Of thine own life or mine, seal up thy lips,
 Let 'em not name De Cortes! stay, stay, stay!
 Roderigo has into his father's house
 A passage through a garden——

Diego. Yes, my lord.

10

Louis. Thither, I must, find Roderigo out,
 And check him, check him home: if he but dare—
 No more!—Diego, along! my soul does fight
 A thousand battles blacker than this night. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III.

A Bed-chamber in FERNANDO'S House.

RODERIGO and CLARA discovered.

Cla. Though the black veil of night hath overclouded
The world in darkness, yet ere many hours
The sun will rise again, and then this act
Of my dishonour will appear before you .
More black than is the canopy that shrouds it :
What are you, pray ? what are you ?

Rod. Husht—a friend, a friend.

Cla. A friend ? be then a gentle ravisher,
An honourable villain : as you have
Disrob'd my youth of nature's goodliest portion, 10
My virgin purity, so with your sword
Let out that blood which is infected now
By your soul-staining lust.

Rod. Pish !

Cla. Are you noble ?
I know you then will marry me ; say !

Rod. Umb.

Cla. Not speak to me ? are wanton devils dumb ?
How are so many harmless virgins wrought
By falsehood of prevailing words to yield
Too easy forfeits of their shames and liberty,
If every orator of folly plead
In silence, like this untongu'd piece of violence ? 20
You shall not from me. [Holding him.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

A large one and a fair one ; in the midst
 A curious alabaster¹ fountain stands,
 Fram'd: like — like what? no matter — swift, remem-
 brance !

Rich furniture within too? and what's this?
 A precious crucifix! I have enough.

50

[*Takes the crucifix, and conceals it in her bosom.*

Assist me, O you powers that guard the innocent !

Re-enter RODERIGO.

Rod. Now.

Cla. Welcome, if you come armed in destruction :
 I am prepar'd to die.

Rod. Tell me your name,
 And what you are.

Cla. You urge me to a sin
 As cruel as your lust ; I dare not grant it:
 Think on the violence of my defame ;
 And if you mean to write upon my grave
 An epitaph of peace, forbear to question
 Or whence or who I am. I know the heat
 Of your desires are,² after the performance
 Of such a hellish act, by this time drown'd
 In cooler streams of penance ;³ and for my part,

60

¹ Old form of *alabaster*.

² So the old eds. Dyce reads "is," but elsewhere (*Marlowe*, stereot. ed., p. 166) he observes that "examples of similar phraseology,—of a nominative singular followed by a plural verb when a plural genitive intervenes,—are common in our early writers."

³ Penitence.

I have washed off the leprosy. that cleaves
 To my just shame in true and honest tears ;
 I must not leave a mention of my wrongs,
 The stain of my unspotted birth, to memory ;
 Let it lie buried with me in the dust ;
 That never time hereafter may report
 How such a one as you have made me live.
 Be resolute, and do not stagger ; do not,
 For I am nothing.

70

Rod. Sweet, let me enjoy thee
 Now with a free allowance.

Cla. Ha, enjoy me ?
 Insufferable villain !

Rod. Peace, speak low ;
 I mean no second force ; and since I find
 Such goodness in an unknown frame of virtue,
 Forgive my foul attempt, which I shall grieve for
 So heartily, that could you be yourself
 Eye-witness to my constant vow'd repentance,
 Trust me, you'd pity me.

Cla. Sir, you can speak now.

Rod. So much I am the executioner
 Of mine own trespass, that I have no heart
 Nor reason to disclose my name or quality ;
 You must excuse me that ; but, trust me, fair one,
 Were this ill deed undone, this deed of wickedness,
 I would be proud to court your love like him
 Whom my first birth presented to the world.
 This for your satisfaction : what remains,

80

That you can challenge as a service from me,
I both expect and beg it.

Cla. First, that you swear,
Neither in riot of your mirth, in passion 90
Of friendship, or in folly of discourse,
To speak of wrongs done to a ravish'd maid.

Rod. As I love truth, I swear!

Cla. Next, that you lead me
Near to the place you met me, and there leave me
To my last fortunes, ere the morning rise.

Rod. Say more.

Cla. Live ¹ a new man: if e'er you marry—
O me, my heart's a-breaking!—but if e'er
You marry, in a constant love to her.
That shall be then your wife, redeem the fault
Of my undoing. I am lost for ever: 100
Pray, use no more words.

Rod. You must give me leave
To veil you close.

Cla. Do what you will; no time
Can ransom me from sorrows or dishonours.

[*RODERIGO throws a veil over her.*

Shall we now go?

Rod. My shame may live without me,
But in my soul I bear my guilt about me.
Lend me your hand; now follow.

[*Exeunt.*

¹ " Is one of several important corrections made with a pen in a copy of the first 4to, by some early possessor, who, as he has also inserted some additions to the text, had, in all probability, seen a manuscript of the piece.—Both eds. 'Lay,' which, before the copy just mentioned came into my hands, I had altered to 'Play.'"—*Dyce.*

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Enter JOHN reading.

John. She is not noble, true ; wise nature meant
Affection should ennoble¹ her descent,
For love and beauty keeps, as rich a seat
Of sweetness in the mean-born as the great. 20
I am resolv'd. [Exit.

Diego. 'Tis Roderigo certainly,
Yet his voice makes me doubt ; but I'll o'erhear him.
[Exit.

SCENE V.

A Street.

Enter LOUIS.

Louis. That I,² I, only I should be the man
Made accessory and a party both
To mine own torment, at a time so near
The birth of all those comforts I have travail'd with
So many, many hours of hopes and fears ;
Now at the instant—

Enter RODERIGO.

Ha ! stand ! thy name,
Truly and speedily.

Rod. Don Louis ?

Louis. The same ;
But who art thou ? speak !

¹ Old eds. "enable."

² Old eds. "That if only I," &c.

Rod. Roderigo.

Louis. Tell me,

As you're a noble gentleman, as ever
 You hope to be enroll'd amongst the virtuous, 10
 As you love goodness, as you wish t' inherit
 The blessedness and fellowship of angels,
 As you're my friend, as you are Roderigo,
 As you are anything that would deserve
 A worthy name, where have you been to-night?
 O, how have you dispos'd of that fair creature
 Whom you led captive from me? speak, O speak!
 Where, how, when, in what usage have you left her?
 Truth, I require all truth.

Rod. Though I might question
 The strangeness of your importunity, 20
 Yet, 'cause I note distraction in the height
 Of curiosity, I will be plain
 And brief.

Louis. I thank you, sir.

Rod. Instead of feeding
 Too wantonly upon so rich a banquet,
 I found, even in that beauty that invited me,
 Such a commanding majesty of chaste
 And humbly glorious virtue, that it did not
 More check my rash attempt than draw to ebb
 The float¹ of those desires, which in an instant
 Were cool'd in their own streams of shame and folly. 30

Louis. Now all increase of honours

¹ Flow, flood.

Fall in full showers on thee, Roderigo,
The best man living !

Rod. You are much transported
With this discourse, methinks.

Louis. Yes, I am.
She told ye her name too ?

Rod. I could not urge it
By any importunity.

Louis. Better still !
Where did you leave her ?

Rod. Where I found her ; farther
She would by no means grant me to wait on her :
O Louis, I am lost !

Louis. This self-same lady
Was she to whom I have been long a suitor, 40
And shortly hope to marry.

Rod. She your mistress, then ? Louis, since friendship
And noble honesty conjures our loves.
To a continu'd league, here I unclasp
The secrets of my heart. O, I have had
A glimpse of such a creature, that deserves
A temple ! if thou lov'st her—and I blame thee not,
For who can look on her, and not give up
His life unto her service ?—if thou lov'st her,
For pity's sake conceal her ; let me not. 50
As much as know her name, there's a temptation ¹ in't ;
Let me not know her dwelling, birth, or quality,
Or anything that she calls hers, but thee ;

¹ Temptation.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Louis. Diego?

Diego. Yes,

'Tis I, and I have had a fine segary,¹

The rarest wildgoose chase!

Louis. 'T had made thee melancholy.

Diego. Don Roderigo here? 'tis well you met him;
For though I miss'd him, yet I met an accident 80
Has almost made me burst with laughter.

Louis. How so?

Diego. I'll tell you: as we parted, I perceiv'd
A walking thing before me, strangely tickled
With rare conceited raptures; him I dogg'd,
Supposing 't had been Roderigo landed
From his new pinnace, deep in contemplation
Of the sweet voyage he stole to-night.

Rod. You're pleasant.

Louis. Prithee, who was't?

Rod. Not I.

Diego. You're i' the right, not you indeed;
For 'twas that noble gentleman Don John, 90
Son to-the Count Francisco de Carcomo.

Louis. In love, it seems?

Diego. Yes, pepper'd, on my life;
Much good may't do him; I'd not be so lin'd²
For my cap full of double pistolets.

Louis. What should his mistress be?

Diego. That's yet a riddle

¹ Vagary.

² "Qy. 'lim'd'?"—*Dyce.*

Beyond my resolution ; but of late
I have observ'd him oft to frequent the sports
The gipsies newly come to th' city present.

Louis. It is said there is a creature with 'em,
Though young of years, yet of such absolute beauty, 100
Dexterity of wit, and general qualities,
That Spain reports her not without admiration.

Diego. Have you seen her?

Louis. Never.

Diego. Nor you, my lord?

Rod. I not remember.

Diego. Why, then, you never saw the prettiest toy
That ever sung or danc'd.

Louis. Is she a gipsy?

Diego. In her condition, not in her complexion :
I tell you once more, 'tis a spark of beauty
Able to set a world at gaze ; the sweetest,
The wittiest rogue ! shall's see 'em? they've fine
gambols, 110

Are mightily frequented ; court and city
Flock to 'em, but the country does 'em worship :
This little ape gets money by the sack-full,
It trolls upon her.

Louis. Will ye with us, friend?

Rod. You know my other projects ; sights to me
Are but vexations.

Louis. O, you must be merry !—
Diego, we'll to th' gipsies.

Diego. Best take heed
You be not snapp'd.

Louis. How snapp'd?

Diego. By that little fairy;

'T has a shrewd tempting face and a notable tongue.

Louis. I fear not either.

Diego. Go, then.

Louis. Will you with us?

120

Rod. I'll come after.— [*Exeunt LOUIS and DIEGO.*

Pleasure and youth like smiling evils woo us

To taste new follies; tasted, they undo us.

[*Exit.*

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

used by our Spanish pickaroos¹—I mean filching, foisting,² nimming, jilting—we defy; none in our college shall study 'em; such graduates we degrade.

Ant. I am glad Spain has an honest company.

Alv. We'll entertain no mountebanking stroll,
No piper, fiddler, tumbler through small hoops,
No ape-carrier, baboon-bearer;

20

We must have nothing stale, trivial, or base:

Am I your major-domo, your teniente,³

Your captain, your commander?

Ant. Who but you?

Alv. So then: now being entered Madrill, the enchanted circle of Spain, have a care to your new lessons.

Car. } We listen.
Ant. }

Alv. Plough deep furrows, to catch deep root in th' opinion of the best, grandoes,⁴ dukes, marquesses, condes, and other titulados; show your sports to none but them: what can you do with three or four fools in a dish, and a blockhead cut into sippets?

31

Ant. Scurvy meat!

Alv. The Lacedemonians threw their beards over

caco, a pickpocket (unless indeed it has some affinity with the phrase *hacer cacos*, to wheedle), and that *Germania* signifies, in that language, the jargon of the gipsies. See Neuman's *Span. and Engl. Dict.* in vv."—*Dyce*.

¹ Rogues, thieves.

² See note 6, vol. iv. p. 193.

³ Lieutenant. (*Span.*)

⁴ *i.e.*, grandees.—Cf. Heywood's *A Challenge for Beauty*: "Ay, and I assure your Ladyship, allied to the best grandoes of Spain" (Works, ed. Pearson, v. 18).

their shoulders, to observe what men did behind them as well as before; you must do[t].

Car. We¹ shall never do't.

Ant. Our muzzles are too short.

Alv. Be not English gipsies, in whose company a man's not sure of the ears of his head, they so pilfer! no such angling;² what you pull to land catch fair: there is no iron so foul but may be gilded; and our gipsy profession, how base soever in show, may acquire commendations.

43

Car. Gipsies, and yet pick no pockets?

Alv. Infamous and roguy! so handle your webs, that they never come to be woven in the loom of justice: take anything that's given you, purses, knives, handkerchers, rosaries, tweezes,³ any toy, any money; refuse not a marvedi,⁴ a blank:⁵ feather by feather birds build nests, grain pecked up after grain makes pullen fat.

50

¹ "We shall . . . short."—In the old eds. these words form one speech, with the prefix *Both*.

² Dekker in the *Bellman of London*, 1608, gives a particular description of the rogues known as *Anglers*. "The rod they angle with," he informs us, "is a staff of five or six foot in length, in which within one inch of the top is a little hole bored quite through, in which hole they put an iron hook, and with the same do they angle at windows about midnight, the draught they pluck up being apparel, sheets, coverlets, or whatsoever their iron hooks can lay hold of."—*Non-Dramatic Works*, ed. Grosart, iii. 95.

³ Tweezers.

⁴ A small Spanish copper coin.

⁵ "'*Bianquillin*, doit, a very small coin.'—Neuman's *Span. and Engl. Dict.* in v. *Blanks* 'are said to be coins struck by Henry V. in France of baser alloy than sterling [silver], and running for eightpence. They were called Blanks or Whites from their colour.'—Ruding's *Ann. of the Coinage*, vol. ii. p. 8, ed. 4to."—*Dyce*.

Ant. The best is, we Spaniards are no great feeders.

Alv. If one city cannot maintain us, away to another ! our horses must have wings. Does Madrill yield no money ? Seville shall ; is Seville closefisted ? Valladolid ¹ is open ; so Cordova,² so Toledo. Do not our Spanish wines please us ? Italian can then, French can. Preferment's bow is hard to draw, set all your strengths to it ; what you get, keep ; all the world is a second Rochelle ;³ make all sure, for you must not look to have your dinner served in with trumpets. 60

Car. No, no, sack-buts ⁴ shall serve us.

Alv. When you have money, hide it ; sell all our horses but one.

Ant. Why one ?

Alv. 'Tis enough to carry our apparel and trinkets, and the less our ambler eats, our cheer is the better. None be sluttish, none thievish, none lazy ; all bees, no drones, and our hives shall yield us honey.

Enter GUIAMARA, CONSTANZA, CHRISTIANA, disguised as gipsies, and CARDOCHIA.

Const. See, father, how I'm fitted : how do you like This our new stock of clothes ?

¹ Old eda. " Vallidoly."

² Old eda. " Cordica."

³ " In the time of our poets, seems to have been a general asylum for those persecuted Protestants who knew not where to go ; and Alvarez intimates that the whole world was equally open to people of their description, who had no settled home."—Editor of 1816.

⁴ Cf. (for the pun) *The Mayor of Queenborough*, iii. 3, l. 231.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

at me, and shot golden arrows, but I myself gave aim,¹ thus,—wide, four bows; short, three and a half: they that crack me shall find me as hard as a nut of Galicia; a parrot I am, but my teeth too tender to crack a wanton's almond.²

Alv. Thou art, my noble girl: a many dons
Will not believe but that thou art a boy
In woman's³ clothes; and to try that conclusion,
To see if thou be'st alchemy⁴ or no, 100
They'll throw down gold in musses;⁵ but, Pretiosa,
Let these proud sakers⁶ and gersfalcons fly,
Do not thou move a wing; be to thyself
Thyself,⁷ and not a changeling.

Const. How? not a changeling?
Yes, father, I will play the changeling;
I'll change myself into a thousand shapes,
To court our brave spectators; I'll change my postures
Into a thousand different variations,
To draw even ladies' eyes to follow mine;
I'll change my voice into a thousand tones, 110
To chain attention: not a changeling, father?
None but myself⁸ shall play the changeling.

¹ So ed. 1.—Ed. 2. "give." (The person who gave aim stood near the butt and indicated how far the arrow fell from the mark.)

² *Almond for a parrot* was an old proverbial expression.

³ Old eds. "womens."

⁴ Alchemy.—See note, vol. iii. p. 163.

⁵ "In musses" = to be scrambled for. See Nares s. MUSS.

⁶ A species of hawk.

⁷ "A MS. addition in copy of the first 4to. See note [p. 125]."—Dyce.

⁸ Perhaps the actor who took the part of Constanza had previously played Antonio in *The Changeling*.

Alv. Do what thou wilt, Pretiosa.

[*A knocking within,*
What noise is this?

Re-enter CARDOCHIA.

Card. Here's gentlemen swear all the oaths in Spain they have seen you, must see you, and will see you.

Alv. To drown this noise let 'em enter.

[*Exit CARDOCHIA.*

Enter SANCHO and SOTO.

San. Is your playhouse an inn,¹ a gentleman cannot see you without crumpling his taffeta cloak?

Soto. Nay, more than a gentleman, his man being a diminutive don too. 120

San. Is this the little ape does the fine tricks?

Const. Come aloft,² Jack little ape!

San. Would my jack might come aloft! please you to set the watermill with the ivory cogs³ in't a-grinding my handful of purging comfits. [*Offers comfits.*

Soto. My master desires to have you loose from your company.

Const. Am I pigeon, think you, to be caught with cummin-seeds?⁴ a fly to glue my wings to sweetmeats, and so be ta'en? 130

¹ Plays were frequently acted in inn-yards; on such occasions the audience would not be very select.

² *Come aloft, Jackanapes!* was the cry of the ape-ward when the ape was to go through his feats of agility.

³ The teeth of the mill-wheel.

⁴ "Were used for luring pigeons to a dovecote."—*Dyce.*

San. When do your gambols begin?

Alv. Not till we ha' dined.

San. 'Foot, then your bellies will be so full, you'll be able to do nothing.—Soto, prithee, set a good face on't, for I cannot, and give the little monkey that letter.

Soto. Walk off and hum to yourself. [*SANCHO retires.*]
—I dedicate, sweet Destiny, into whose hand every Spaniard desires to put a distaff, these lines of love.

[*Offering a paper to CONSTANZA.*

Gri. What love? what's the matter?

Soto. Grave mother Bumby,¹ the mark's out a' your mouth.

141

Alv. What's the paper? from whom comes it?

Soto. The commodity wrapped up in the paper are verses; the warming-pan that puts heat into 'em, yon² fire-brained bastard of Helicon.

San. Hum, hum.³

Alv. What's your master's name?

Soto. His name is Don Tomazo Portacareco, nuncle⁴ to young Don Hortado de Mendonza, cousin-german to the Conde de Tindilla, and natural brother to Francisco de Bavadilla, one of the commendadors of Alcantara, a gentleman of long standing.

152

*Alv.*⁵ And of as long a style.

¹ A famous fortune-teller: she figures in one of Lyly's plays.

² Old eds. "you."

³ "'San. Hum, hum.'—A MS. addition in copy of the first 4to. See note [p. 125]."—Dyce.

⁴ Uncle: a corruption of *mine uncle*.

⁵ This remark of Alvarez is not in the old eds., but is one of the MS. additions in Dyce's copy of ed. 1.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Soto. Do, master, and I'll run division behind your back.¹

San. [sings.]

*O that I were a bee to sing
Hum, bus, bus, hum! I first would bring
Home honey to your hive, and there leave my sting.*

Soto. [sings.] *He maunders.*²

181

San. [sings.]

*O that I were a goose, to feed
At your barn-door I such corn I need,
Nor would I bite, but goslings breed.*

Soto. [sings.] *And ganders.*

San. [sings.]

*O that I were your needle's eye!
How through your linen would I fly,
And never leave one stitch awry!*

Soto. [sings.] *He'll touse ye.*

San. [sings.]

*O would I were one of your hairs,
That you might comb out all my cares,
And kill the nits of my despairs!*

190

Soto. [sings.] *O lousy!*

San. How? lousy? can rhymes be lousy?

Const.

*Car. &c.*³

} No, no, they're excellent.

Alv. But are these all your own?

San. Mine own? would I might never see ink drop

¹ " 'Soto. Do, master, and I'll run division behind your back.' Another MS. addition."—*Dyce.*

² Whines like a beggar.

³ Old eds. "Omnes."

out of the nose of any goose-quill more, if velvet cloaks have not clapped me for 'em! Do you like 'em?

Const. Past all compare? 200

They shall be writ out: when you've as good or better, For these and those, pray, book me down your debtor: Your paper is long-liv'd, having two souls, Verses and gold.

San. Would both those were in thy¹ pretty little body, sweet gipsy!

Const. A pistolet² and this paper? 'twould choke me.

Soto. No more than a bribe does a constable: the verses will easily into your head, then buy what you like with the gold, and put it into your belly. I hope I ha' chawed a good reason for you. 211

San. Will you chaw my jennet ready, sir?

Soto. And eat him down, if you say the word. [*Exit.*]

San. Now the coxcomb my man is gone, because you're but a country company of strolls, I think your stock is threadbare; here mend it with this cloak.

[*Giving his cloak.*]

Alv. What do you mean, sir?

San. This scarf, this feather, and this hat.

[*Giving his scarf, &c.*]

Alv. } Dear signor!—
*Car. &c.*³ }

San. If they be never so dear:—pox o' this hot ruff! little gipsy, wear thou that. [*Giving his ruff.* 221

¹ Old eds. "thee."

² (1) Small coin, (2) small pistol.

³ Old eds. "Omnes."

Alv. Your meaning, sir?

San. My meaning is, not to be an ass, to carry a burden when I need not. If you show your gambols forty leagues hence, I'll gallop to 'em.—Farewell, old greybeard;—adieu, mother mumble-crust;—to-morrow, my little wart of beauty. [*Exit.*

Enter behind JOHN, muffled.

Alv. So, harvest will come in; such sunshine days
Will bring in golden sheaves, our markets raise:
Away to your task. 230

[*Exit* ALVAREZ, CHRISTIANA, CARLO, and
ANTONIO; and as GUIAMARA and CON-
STANZA are going out, JOHN pulls the
latter back.

Const. Mother! grandmother!

John. Two rows of kindred in one mouth?

Gui. Be not uncivil, sir; thus have you used 'her
thrice.

John. Thrice? three thousand more: may I not use
mine own?

Const. Your own! by what tenure? 237

John. Cupid entails this land upon me; I have wooed
thee, thou art coy: by this air, I am a bull of Tarifa,
wild, mad for thee! you told¹ I was some copper coin;
I am a knight of Spain; Don Francisco de Carcomo my
father, I Don John his son; this paper tells you more.
[*Gives paper.*]—Grumble not, old granam; here's gold

¹ "Qy. 'trowed'?"—*Dyce.*

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Guz. There's enough for your gold.—Witty child !

[*Aside, and exit.*]

John. Turn gipsy for two years ? a capering trade ;
And I in th' end may keep a dancing-school,
Having serv'd for it ; gipsy I must turn.

O beauty, the sun's fires cannot so burn ! [Exit.]

SCENE II.

A Room in the House of PEDRO.

Enter CLARA.

Cla. I have offended ; yet, O heaven, thou know'st
How much I have abhorr'd, even from my birth,
A thought that tended to immodest folly !
Yet I have fallen ; thoughts with disgraces strive,
And thus I live, and thus I die alive.

Enter PEDRO and MARIA.

Ped. Fie, Clara, thou dost court calamity too much.

Mar. Yes, girl, thou dost.

Ped. Why should we fret our eyes out with our tears,
Weary [heaven with¹] complaints ? 'tis fruitless, childish
Impatience ; for when mischief hath wound up 10
The full weight of the ravisher's foul life
To an equal height of ripe iniquity,
The poise will, by degrees, sink down his soul

¹ The bracketed words were added by the editor of 1816.

To a much lower, much more lasting ruin
Than our joint wrongs can challenge.

*Mar.*¹ Darkness itself
Will change night's sable brow into a sunbeam
For a discovery ; and be [thou] sure,
Whenever we can learn what monster 'twas
Hath robb'd thee of the jewel held so precious,
Our vengeance shall be noble.

Ped. Royal, anything : 20
Till then let's live securely ; to proclaim
Our sadness were mere vanity.

Cla. 'A needs not ;
I'll study to be merry.

Ped. We are punish'd,
Maria, justly ; covetousness to match
Our daughter to that matchless piece of ignorance,
Our foolish ward, hath drawn this curse upon us.

Mar. I fear it has.

Ped. Off with this face of grief :
Here² comes Don Louis.

Enter LOUIS and DIEGO.

Noble sir.

Louis. My lord,
I trust I have you[r] and your lady's leave
T' exchange a word with your fair daughter.

Ped. Leave 30
And welcome.—Hark, Maria.—Your ear too.

¹ Old eds. " *Ped.* "

² To this line the old eds. give the prefix " *Die.* " (*Diego*).

Diego. Mine, my lord?

Louis. Dear Clara, I have often sued for love,
And now desire you would at last be pleas'd
To style me yours.

Cla. Mine eyes ne'er saw that gentleman
Whom I more nobly in my heart respected
Than I have you, yet you must, sir, excuse me,
If I resolve to use awhile that freedom
My younger days allow.

Louis. But shall I hope?

Cla. You will do injury to better fortunes,
To your own merit, greatness, and advancement,
Which I beseech you not to slack. 40

Louis. Then hear me ;
If ever I embrace another choice,
Until I know you elsewhere match'd, may all
The chief of my desires find scorn and ruin !

Cla. O me !

Louis. Why sigh you, lady ?

Cla. 'Deed, my lord,
I am not well.

Louis. Then all discourse is tedious ;
I'll choose some fitter time ; till when,¹ fair Clara——

Cla. You shall not be unwelcome hither, sir ;
That's all that I dare promise.

Louis. Diego.

Diego. My lord ?

Louis. What says Don Pedro ? 50

¹ So ed. 1.—Ed. 2. "then."

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

The difference betwixt your noble father
 And Cònde de Alvarez; how it sprung
 From a mere trifle first, a cast¹ of hawks,
 Whose made the swifter flight, whose could mount
 highest, 80

Lie longest on the wing: from change of words
 Their controversy grew to blows, from blows
 To parties, thence to faction; and, in short,
 I well remember how our streets were frighted
 With brawls, whose end was blood; till, when no friends
 Could mediate their discords, by the king
 A reconciliation was enforc'd,
 Death threaten'd [to] the first occasioner
 Of breach, besides the confiscation
 Of lands and honours: yet at last they met 90
 Again; again they drew to sides, renew'd
 Their ancient quarrel; in which dismal uproar
 Your father hand to hand fell by Alvarez:
 Alvarez fled; and after him the doom
 Of exile was se[n]t out: he, as report
 Was bold to voice, retir'd himself to Rhodes;
 His lands and honours by the king bestow'd
 On you, but then an infant.

Louis. Ha, an infant?

Ped. His wife, the sister to the corrègidor,
 With a young daughter and some few that follow'd her,
 By stealth were shipp'd for Rhodes, and by a storm 101
 Shipwreck'd at sea: but for the banish'd Conde,

¹ "Cast of hawks" = couple of hawks.

'Twas never yet known what became of him :
Here's all I can inform you.

Louis. A repeal ?

Yes, I will sue for't, beg for't, buy it, anything
That may by possibility of friends
Or money, I'll attempt.

Ped. 'Tis a brave charity.

Louis. Alas ! poor lady, I could mourn for her !
Her loss was usury more than I covet ;
But for the man, I'd sell my patrimony
For his repeal, and run about the world
To find him out ; there is no peace can dwell
About my father's tomb, till I have sacrific'd
Some portion of revenge to his wrong'd ashes.
You will along with me ?

110

Ped. You need not question it.

Louis. I have strange thoughts about me : two such
furies
Revel amidst my joys as well may move
Distraction in a saint, vengeance and love.
I'll follow, sir.

Ped. Pray, lead the way, you know it.— [*Exit* LOUIS.]

Enter SANCHO *without his cloak,*¹ &c., and SOTO.

How² now ? from whence come you, sir ?

120

San. From fleaing³ myself, sir.

¹ See p. 144.

² These words are given to Soto in the old eds.

³ Old form of *slaying*.

Soto. From playing with fencers, sir; and they have beat him out of his clothes, sir.

Ped. Cloak, band, rapier, all lost at dice?

San. Nor cards neither.

Soto. This was one of my master's dog-days, and he would not sweat too much.

San. It was mine own goose, and I laid the giblets upon another coxcomb's trencher: you are my guardian, best beg me for a fool¹ now. 130

Soto. He that begs one begs t'other. [Aside.

Ped. Does any gentleman give away his things thus?

San. Yes, and gentlewomen give away their things too.

Soto. To gulls sometimes, and are cony-catched for their labour.

Ped. Wilt thou ever play the coxcomb?

San. If no other parts be given me, what would you have me do?

Ped. Thy father was as brave a Spaniard
As ever spake the haut² Castilian tongue. 140

San. Put me in clothes, I'll be as brave³ as he.

Ped. This is the ninth time thou hast play'd the ass,
Flinging away thy trappings and thy cloth
To cover others, and go nak'd thyself.

San. I'll make 'em up ten, because I'll be even with you.

¹ "Beg me for a fool." See note, p. 91.

² "i.e. high, lofty: 'to brave his enemy in the rich and lofty Castilian [tongue].'"—Dekker's *English Villanies, &c.*, sig. M 4, ed. 1632.—*Dyce.*

³ (1) Finely attired, (2) valiant.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Ped. You'll gallop both to the gallows ; so fare you well. [Exit.

San. And be hanged you ! new clothes, you'd best.

Soto. Four cloaks, that you may give away three, and keep one. 170

San. We'll live as merrily as beggars ; let's both turn gipsies.

Soto. By any means ; if they cog, we'll lie ; if they toss, we'll tumble.

San. Both in a belly, rather than fail.

Soto. Come, then, we'll be gipsified.

San. And tipsified too.

Soto. And we will show such tricks and such rare gambols,
As shall put down the elephant¹ and camels. [Exeunt.

¹ Frequent mentions are made of performing elephants. See *Marlowe*, ed. Bullen, iii. 217 ; *Jonson*, ed. Gifford, 1875, ii. 144.

ACT III.

SCENE I.

A Street.

Enter RODERIGO disguised as an Italian.

Rod. A thousand stings are in me: O, what vild¹
prisons

Make we our bodies to our immortal souls!

Brave tenants to bad houses; 'tis a dear rent

They pay for naughty lodging: the soul, the mistress;

The body, the caroch that carries her;

Sins the swift wheels that hurry her away;

Our will, the coachman rashly driving on,

Till coach and carriage both are quite o'erthrown.

My body yet 'scapes bruises; that known thief

Is not yet call'd to th' bar: there's no true sense 10

Of pain but what the law of conscience

Condemns us to; I feel that. Who would lose

A kingdom for a cottage? an estate

Of perpetuity for a man's life

¹ Vile.

For annuity of that life, pleasure? a spark
 To those celestial fires that burn about us ;
 A painted star to that bright firmament
 Of constellations which each night are set
 Lighting our way ; yet thither how few get !
 How many thousand in Madrill drink off 20
 The cup of lust, and laughing, in one month,
 Not whining as I do ! Should this sad lady
 Now meet me, do I know her? should this temple,
 By me profan'd, lie in the ruins here,
 The pieces would scarce show her me : would they did !
 She's mistress to Don Louis ; by his steps,
 And this disguise, I'll find her. To Salamanca
 Thy father thinks thou'rt gone ; no; close here stay ;
 Where'er thou travel'st, scorpions stop thy way.
 Who are ¹ these ? 30

Enter SANCHO and SOTO disguised as Gipsies.

San. Soto, how do I show ?

Soto. Like a rusty armour new scoured ; but, master,
 how show I ?

San. Like an ass with a new piebald saddle on his
 back.

Soto. If the devil were a tailor, he would scarce know
 us in these gaberdines.²

San. If a tailor were the devil, I'd not give a louse for

¹ The words " Who are " are a MS. addition in Dyce's copy of ed. 1.

² Coarse frocks.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Soto. A calf's head and brains were better for my stomach.

San. A rib of poetry! 70

Soto. A modicum of the Muses! a horse-shoe of Helicon!

San. A magpie of Parnassus! welcome again! I am a firebrand of Phœbus myself; we'll invoke together, so you will not steal my plot.

Rod. 'Tis not my fashion.

San. But now-a-days 'tis all the fashion.

Soto. What was the last thing you writ? a comedy?

Rod. No! 'twas a sad, too sad a tragedy.

Under these eaves I'll shelter me. 80

San. See, here comes our company; do our tops spin as you would have 'em?

Soto. If not, whip us round.

Enter ALVAREZ, GUIAMARA, CONSTANZA, CHRISTIANA, CARLO, ANTONIO, *and others, disguised as before.*

San. I sent you a letter to tell you we were upon a march.

Alv. And you are welcome.—Yet these fools will trouble us! [*Aside.*]

Gui. Rich fools shall buy our trouble.

San. Hang lands! it's nothing but trees, stones, and dirt. Old father, I have gold to keep up our stock. Precious Pretiosa, for whose sake I have thus transformed myself out of a gentleman into a gipsy, thou shalt not want sweet rhymes, my little musk-cat; for besides

*Peter-see-me*¹ shall wash thy nodd²

And malaga glasses fox³ thee;

140

If, poet, thou toss not bowl for bowl,

Thou shalt not kiss a doxy.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE II.

A Garden belonging to FRANCISCO'S House.

*Enter FERNANDO, FRANCISCO, JOHN, PEDRO, MARIA,
LOUIS, and DIEGO.*

Fer. Louis de Castro, since you circled are
In such a golden ring of worthy friends,
Pray, let me question you about that business
You and I last conferr'd on.

Louis. My lord, I wish it.

Fer. Then, gentlemen, though you all know this man,
Yet now look on him well, and you shall find
Such mines of Spanish honour in his bosom
As but in few are treasur'd.

Louis. O, my good lord——

Fer. He's son to that De Castro o'er whose tomb
Fame stands writing a book, which will take up 10
The age of time to fill it with the stories
Of his great acts, and that his honour'd father

¹ A corruption of *Pedro Ximenes*, a delicate Spanish wine.

² Noddle.

³ Intoxicate.

Fell in the quarrel of those families,
His own and Don Alvarez de Castilla[’s].

Fran. The volume of those quarrels¹ is too large
And too wide printed in our memory.

Louis. Would it had ne’er come forth !

Fran. } So wish we all.
Ped., &c. }

Fer. But here’s a son as matchless as the father,
For his² mind’s bravery ; he lets blood his spleen,
Tears out the leaf in which the picture stands
Of slain De Castro, casts a hill of sand
On all revenge, and stifles it.

20

Fran. } ’Tis done nobly !
Ped., &c. }

Fer. For I by him am courted to solicit
The king for the repeal of poor Alvarez,
Who lives a banish’d man, some say, in Naples.

Ped. Some say in Arragon.

Louis. No matter where ;
That paper folds in it my hand and heart,
Petitioning the royalty of Spain
To free the good old man, and call him home :
But what hope hath your lordship that these beams
Of grace shall shine upon me ?

30

Fer. The word royal.

Fran. } And that’s enough.
Ped., &c. }

¹ Old eds. "families."—"I have no doubt the printer caught the word from the preceding lines."—Editor of 1816.

² Old eds. "he."

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Enter SOTO disguised as before, with a cornet in his hand.

Soto. A crew of gipsies with desire
To show their sports are at your gates a-fire.

Fran. How, how, my gates a-fire, knave?

John. Art panting? I am a-fire I'm sure! [*Aside.*

Fer. What are the things they do?

Soto. They frisk, they caper, dance and sing,
Tell fortunes too, which is a very fine thing; 60
They tumble—how? not up and down,
As tumblers do, but from town to town:
Antics they have and gipsy-masquing,
And toys which you may have for asking:
They come to devour nor wine nor good cheer,
But to earn money, if any be here;
But being ask'd, as I suppose,
Your answer will be, in your t'other hose;¹
For there's not a gipsy amongst 'em that begs,
But gets his living by his tongue and legs. 70
If therefore you please, dons, they shall come in:
Now I have ended, let them begin.

Fer.

Ped., &c.

} Ay, ay, by any means.

Fran. But, fellow, bring you music along with you too?

Soto. Yes, my lord, both loud music and still music;
the loud is that which you have heard, and the still is
that which no man can hear. [*Exit.*

¹ "In your t'other hose," see note 4, vol. i. p. 45.

Fer. A fine knave!

Fra. There's report¹ of a fair gipsy,
A pretty little toy, whom all our gallants 80
In Madrill flock to look on: this she, trow?²

John. Yes, sure³ 'tis she—I should be sorry else.

[*Aside.*

Enter ALVAREZ, GUIAMARA, CONSTANZA, CHRISTIANA,
CARLO, ANTONIO, RODERIGO, SANCHO, SOTO, *and*
others, disguised as before, with the following

Song.

*Come, follow your leader, follow ;
Our convoy be Mars and Apollo !
The van comes brave up here ;*

(Answer.) As hotly comes the rear :

Chorus.

*Our knackers are the fifes and drums,
Sa, sa, the gipsies' army comes !*

*Horsemen we need not fear,
There's none but footmen here ; 90
The horse sure charge without ;
Or if they wheel about,*

¹ Ed. 2, "a report."

² *i.e.*, think you?

³ "To this line, which in old eds. forms part of Francisco's speech, the prefix '*John.*' is added with a pen in copy of the first 4to: see note [p. 125.]"—*Dyce.*

Chorus.

*Our knackers are the shot that fly,
Pit-a-pat rattling in the sky.*

*If once the great ordnance play,
That's laughing, yet run not away,
But stand the push of pike,
Scorn can but basely strike ;*

Chorus.

*Then let our armies join and sing,
And pit-a-pat make our knackers ring.* 100

*Arm, arm ! what bands are those ?
They cannot be sure our foes ;
We'll not draw up our force,
Nor muster any horse ;*

Chorus.

*For since they pleas'd to view our sight,
Let's this way, this way give delight.*

*A council of war let's call,
Look either to stand or fall ;
If our weak army stands,
Thank all these noble hands ;* 110

Chorus.

*Whose gates of love being open thrown,
We enter, and then the town's our own.*

Fer. A very dainty thing !

Fran. A handsome creature !

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Ped. [*while SOTO examines his hand.*] What look'st thou on so long?

Soto. So long! do you think good fortunes are fresh herrings, to come in shoals? bad fortunes are like mackerel at midsummer: you have had a sore loss of late.

Ped. I have indeed; what is't?

Soto. I wonder it makes you not mad, for— 140

*Through a gap in your ground thence late hath been
stole*

A very fine ass and a very fine foal;

Take heed, for I speak not by habs and by nabs,¹

Ere long you'll be horribly troubled with scabs.

Ped. I am now so; go, silly fool.

Soto. I ha' gi'n't him. [*Aside.*]

San. O Soto, that ass and foal fattens me!

Fer. The mother of the gipsies, what can she do?
I'll have a bout with her.

John. I with the gipsy daughter.

Fran. To her, boy. 150

Gui. [*examining FERNANDO'S hand.*]

From you went a dove away,

Which ere this had been more white

Than the silver robe of day;

Her eyes, the moon has none so bright.

Sate she now upon your hand,

Not the crown of Spain could buy it;

But 'tis flown to such a land,

¹ "Hab or nab means properly, rashly, without consideration. 'Shot hab or nab at random,' Holinshed, Chron. Ireland, p. 82. See Florio, p. 48; Cotgrave in v. *Conjecturalement, Perdu.*"—Halliwell.

*Never more shall you come nigh it:
Ha! yes, if palmistry tell true,
This dove again may fly to you.*

160

Fer. Thou art a lying witch; I'll hear no more.

San. If you be so hot, sir, we can cool you with a song.

Soto. And when that song's done, we'll heat you again with a dance.

Louis. Stay, dear sir; send for Clara, let her know her fortune.

Mar. 'Tis too well known.

Louis. 'Twill make her
Merry to be in this brave company.

Ped. Good Diego, fetch her. [Exit DIEGO. 170

Fran. What's that old man? has he cunning too?

Gui. } More than all we!
Car., &c. }

Louis. Has he? I'll try his spectacles.

Fer. Ha! Roderigo there? the scholar
That went to Salamanca takes his degrees
I' th' school of gipsies? let the fish alone,
Give him line: this is the dove,—the dove?—the raven
That beldam mock'd me with. [Aside

Louis [while ALVAREZ examines his hand.] What worms
pick you out there now? 180

Alv. This:

*When this line the other crosses,
Art tells me 'tis a book of losses:—
Bend your hand thus:—O, here I find
You have lost a ship in a great wind.*

Louis. Lying rogue, I ne'er had any.

Alv. Hark, as I gather,
That great ship was De Castro call'd, your father.

Louis. And I must hew that rock that split him.

Alv. Nay, and you threaten—— [Retires.

Fran. And what's, Don John, thy fortune?
Thou'rt long fumbling at it. 190

John. She tells me tales of the moon, sir.

Const. And now 'tis come to the sun, sir.

[To *Fran.*] *Your son would ride, the youth would run,*

The youth would sail, the youth would fly ;

He's tying a knot will ne'er be done,

He shoots, and yet has ne'er an eye :

You have two, 'twere good you lent him one,

And a heart too, for he has none.

Fran. Hoyday ! lend one of mine eyes ?

San. They give us nothing ; we'd¹ best put on a bold
face and ask it. [Sings. 201

Now that from the hive

You gather'd have the honey,

Our bees but poorly thrive

Unless the banks be sunny ;

Then let your sun and moon,

Your gold and silver shine,

My thanks shall humming fly to you,

Chorus.

And mine, and mine, and mine.

[FRAN., FER., &c., give money.

¹ Old eds. "he'd."

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Fer. My hand shall do't,
And bring the best in Spain to see your sports. 229

Alv. Which to set off, this gentleman, a scholar——

Rod. Pox on you! [Aside.

Alv. Will write for us.

Fer. A Spaniard, sir?

Rod. No, my lord, an Italian.

Fer. Denies

His country too? my son sings gipsy-ballads! [Aside.

Keep as you are, we'll see your poet's vein,
And yours for playing: time is not ill spent
That's thus laid out in harmless merriment.

[*Exeunt* ALVAREZ, GUIAMARA, CONSTANZA,
CHRISTIANA, CARLO, ANTONIO, RODERIGO,
SANCHO, SOTO, and others, dancing.

Ped. My lord of Carcomo, for this entertainment
You shall command our loves.

Fran. You're nobly welcome.

Ped. The evening grows upon us: lords, to all
A happy time of day. 240

Fer. The like to you, Don Pedro.

Louis. To my heart's sole lady
Pray let my service humbly be remember'd;
We only miss'd her presence.

Mar. I shall truly
Report your worthy love. [*Exeunt* PEDRO and MARIA.

Fer. You shall no further;
Indeed, my lords, you shall not.

Fran. With your favour,
We will attend you home.

Re-enter Diego.

Diego. Where's Don Pedro?—

O sir!

Louis. Why, what's the matter?

Diego. The lady Clara,
Passing near to my lord corregidor's house,
Met with a strange mischance.

Fer. How? what mischance?

Diego. The jester that so late arriv'd at court, 250
And there was welcome for his country's sake,
By importunity of some friends, it seems,
Had borrow'd from the gentleman of your horse
The backing of your mettled Barbary;
On which being mounted, whilst a number gaz'd
To hear what jests he could perform, on horse-
back,

The headstrong beast, unus'd to such a rider,
Bears the press of people [on] before him;
With which throng the lady Clara meeting,
Fainted, and there fell down, not bruis'd, I hope, 260
But frighted and entranc'd.

Louis. Ill-destin'd mischief!

Fer. Where have you left her?

Diego. At your house, my lord;
A servant coming forth, and knowing who.
The lady was, convey'd her to a chamber;
A surgeon, too, is sent for.

Fer. Had she been my daughter,

My care could not be greater than it shall be
For her recure.¹

Louis. But if she miscarry,

I am the most unhappy man that lives.

[*Exit.*

Fer. Diego, coast about the fields,
And overtake Don Pedro and his wife;
They newly parted from us.

270

Diego. I'll run speedily.

[*Exit.*

Fer. A strange mischance : but what I have, my lord
Francisco, this day noted, I may tell you ;
An accident of merriment and wonder.

Fran. Indeed, my lord !

Fer. I have not thoughts enough
About me to imagine what th' event
Can come to ; 'tis indeed about my son ;
Hereafter you may counsel me.

Fran. Most gladly.—

Re-enter LOUIS.

How fares the lady ?

Louis. Callèd back to life,
But full of sadness.

Fer. Talks she nothing ?

Louis. Nothing ;

280

For when the women that attend on her
Demanded how she did, she turn'd about,
And answer'd with a sigh : when I came near,
And by the love I bore her begg'd a word
Of hope to comfort me in her well-doing,

¹ Recovery.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Per. You have conquer'd me
In noble courtesy.

Louis. O, that no art
But love itself can cure a love-sick heart ! [Exeunt.]

SCENE III.

A Room in FERNANDO'S House.

CLARA discovered seated in a chair, PEDRO and
MARIA standing by.

Mar. Clara, hope of mine age !

Ped. Soul of my comfort !

Kill us not both at once : why dost thou speed
Thine eye in such a progress 'bout these walls ?

Cla. Yon large window
Yields some fair prospect ; good my lord, look out
And tell me what you see there.

Ped. Easy suit :
Clara, it overviews a spacious garden,
Amidst which stands an alabaster¹ fountain,
A goodly one.

Cla. Indeed, my lord !

Mar. Thy griefs grow wild,²
And will mislead thy judgment through thy weakness, 10
If thou obey thy weakness.

¹ Old form of *alabaster*.

² Old eds. "The *griefs* grow wide."—The correction was made by the editor of 1816.

Cla. Who owns these glorious buildings?

Ped. Don Fernando

De Azevida,¹ the corregidor

Of Madrill, a true noble gentleman.

Cla. May I not see him?

Mar. See him, Clara? why?

Cla. A truly noble gentleman, you said, sir?

Ped. I did: lo, here he comes in person.—

Enter FERNANDO.

We are,

My lord, your servants.

Fer. Good, no compliment.—

Young lady, there attends below a surgeon

Of worthy fame and practice; is't your pleasure

To be his patient?

20

Cla. With your favour, sir,

May I impart some few but needful words

Of secrecy to you, to you yourself,

None but yourself?

Fer. You may.

Ped. Must I not hear 'em?

Mar. Nor I?

Cla. O yes.—Pray, sit, my lord.

Fer. Say on.

Cla. You have been married?

Fer. To a wife,² young lady,

¹ A MS. correction in Dyce's copy of ed. 1.—Old eds. "Ascutda."

² So ed. 1.—Ed. 2, "wise."

Who, whiles the heavens did lend her me, was fruitful
In all those virtues which styles woman good.

Cla. And you had children by her?

Fer. Had, 'tis true;

Now have but one, a son, and he yet lives; 30
The daughter, as if in her birth the mother
Had perfected the errand she was sent for
Into the world, from that hour took her life
In which the other that gave it her lost hers;
Yet shortly she unhappily, but fatally,
Perish'd at sea.

Cla. Sad story!

Fer. Roderigo,

My son——

Cla. How is he call'd, sir?

Fer. Roderigo:

He lives at Salamanca; and I fear
That neither time, persuasions, nor his fortunes,
Can draw him thence.

Cla. My lord, d'ye know this crucifix? ¹

40

[*Showing the crucifix.*

Fer. You drive me to amazement! 'twas my son's,
A legacy bequeath'd him from his mother.
Upon her deathbed, dear to him as life;
On earth there cannot be another treasure
He values at like rate as he does this.

Cla. O, then I am a cast-away!

Mar. How's that?

¹ See p. 123.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Re-enter FERNANDO.

Fer. Sit,¹ pray sit as you sat before. White paper,
 This should be innocence ; these letters gules
 Should be the honest oracles of revenge :
 What's beauty but a perfect white and red ?
 Both here well mix'd limn truth so beautiful,
 That to distrust it, as I am a father,
 Speaks me as foul as rape hath spoken my son ;
 'Tis true.

Cla. 'Tis true.

Fer. Then mark me how I kneel
 Before the high tribunal of your injuries. [*Kneels.*
 Thou too, too-much-wrong'd maid, scorn not my tears, so
 For these are tears of rage, not tears of love,—
 Thou father of this too, too-much-wrong'd maid,—
 Thou mother of her counsels and her cares,
 I do not plead for pity to a villain ;
 O, let him die as he hath liv'd, dishonourably,
 Basely and cursedly ! I plead for pity
 To my till now untainted blood and honour :
 Teach me how I may now be just and cruel,
 For henceforth I am childless.

Cla. Pray, sit, rise ;
 You wrong your place and age.

Fer. [*rising.*] Point me my grave
 In some obscure by-path, where never memory
 Nor mention of my name may be found out.

¹ Old eds. "Sir."

Cl. My lord, I can weep with you, nay, weep for ye,
As you for me; your passions are instructions,
And prompt my faltering tongue to beg at least
A noble satisfaction, though not revenge.

Fer. Speak that again.

Cl. Can you procure no balm
To heal a wounded name?

Fer. O, thou'rt as fair
In mercy as in beauty! wilt thou live,
And I'll be thy physician?

Cl. I'll be yours.

100

Fer. Don Pedro, we'll to counsel;
This daughter shall be ours.—Sleep, sleep, young angel,
My care shall wake about thee.

Cl. Heaven is gracious,
And I am eas'd!

Fer. We will be yet more private;
Night¹ curtains o'er the world; soft dreams rest with
thee!

The best revenge is to reform our crimes,
Then time crowns sorrows, sorrows sweeten times.

[*Exeunt all except CLARA, on whom the scene shuts.*]

¹ Old eds. "Might."

ACT IV.

SCENE I.

A Court before an Inn.

ALVAREZ, GUIAMARA, CONSTANZA, CHRISTIANA, SANCHE, SOTO, ANTONIO, CARLO, RODERIGO, *and others discovered, disguised as before. A shout within.*
Enter JOHN.

Alv. }
Gui., &c. } Welcome, welcome, welcome!

Soto. More sacks to the mill.

San. More thieves to the sacks.

Alv. Peace!

Const. I give you now my welcome without noise.

John. 'Tis music to me. [*Offering to kiss CONSTANZA.*

Alv. }
Gui., &c. } O sir!

San. You must not be in your mutton before we are out of our veal.

Soto. Stay for vinegar to your oysters; no opening till then.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

*From us two years for sun nor snow,
 For¹ hill nor dale, howe'er winds blow ;
 Vow the hard earth to be thy bed,
 With her green cushions under thy head ;
 Flower-banks or moss to be thy board,
 Water thy wine——*

40

San. [sings.] And drink like a lord.

Chorus.

*Kings can have but coronations ;
 We are as proud of gipsy-fashions :
 Dance, sing, and in a well-mix'd border
 Close this new brother of our order.*

Alv. [sings.]

*What we get with us come share,
 You to get must vow to care ;
 Nor strike gipsy, nor stand by
 When strangers strike, but fight, or die ;
 Our gipsy-wenches are not common,
 You must not kiss a fellow's leman ;
 Nor to your own, for one you must,
 In songs send errands of base lust.*

50

Chorus.

*Dance, sing, and in a well-mix'd border
 Close this new brother of our order.*

John [sings.]

*On this turf of grass I vow
 Your laws to keep, your laws allow.*

¹ Qy. "O'er hill, o'er dale, howe'er winds blow?"

All. A gipsy! a gipsy! a gipsy!

Gai. [*sings.*]

*Now choose what maid has yet no mate,
She's yours.*

60

John [*sings.*] *Here then fix I my fate.*

[*Takes CONSTANZA by the hand and offers to kiss her.*]

San. Again fall to before you ha' washed?

Soto. Your nose in the manger before the oats are measured, jade so hungry?

Alv. [*sings.*]

*Set foot to foot; those garlands hold;
Now¹ mark [well] what more is told
By cross arms, the lover's sign,
Vow, as these flowers themselves entwine,
Of April's wealth building a throne
Round,² so your love to one or none;
By those touches of your feet,
You must each night embracing meet,
Chaste, how'er disjoin'd by day;
You the sun with her must play,
She to you the marigold,
To none but you her leaves unfold;
Wake she or sleep, your eyes so charm,
Want, woe, nor weather do her harm.*

70

¹ Old eds. "*Teach him how, now mark,*" &c.—The words "*Teach him how*" are evidently a stage-direction; Alvarez is to initiate the novice.

² So old eds. and Dyce. Perhaps we should place a comma after "throne," and read "*To bound your love,*" &c.

*Car.*¹ [sings.]

*This is your market now of kisses,
Buy and sell free each other blisses.*

80

John. Most willingly.

Chorus.

*Holydays, high days, gipsy-fairs,
When kisses are fairings, and hearts meet in pairs.*

Alc. All ceremonies end here: welcome, brother gipsy!

San. And the better to instruct thee, mark what a brave life 'tis all the year long. [Sings.]

*Brave Don, cast your eyes
On our gipsy fashions:
In our antic hey-de-guize*²
*We go beyond all nations;
Plump Dutch
At us grutch,
So do English, so do French,
He that lopes*³
*On the ropes,
Show me such another wench.*⁴

90

¹ Old eds. "Cla."

² The name of a rustic dance. c. s. *Marionette*

³ Leaps.

⁴ "Qy. 'wrench?' Compare Sir John Davies's *Orchestra, or a Poeme of Dauncing*:

'Such winding sleights, such turns and tricks he hath,
Such creeks, such wrenches, and such dalliaunce.'—St. 53.—*Dyce.*

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Const. His name shall now be Andrew. — Friend
Andrew, mark me :

Two years I am to try you : prove fine gold, 120
The uncrack'd diamond of my faith shall hold.

John. My yows are rocks of adamant.

Const. Two years you are to try me : black¹ when I turn
May I meet youth and want, old age and scorn !

John. Kings' diadems shall not buy thee.

*Car.*² Do you think
You can endure the life, and love it ?

John. As usurers doat upon their treasure.

Soto. But when your face shall be tann'd
Like a sailor's worky-day hand——

San. When your feet shall be gall'd, 130
And your noddle be mall'd——

Soto. When the woods you must forage,
And not meet with poor pease-porridge——

San. Be all to-be-dabbled, yet lie in no sheet——

Soto. With winter's frost, hail, snow, and sleet ;
What life will you say it is then ?

John. As now, the sweetest.

Diego [*within.*] Away ! away ! the corregidor has sent
for you.

San. [*sings.*]

Hence merrily fine to get money !

Dry are the fields, the banks are sunny, 140

¹ " May be the right reading, but qy. 'back.'"—*Dyer.* Perhaps the meaning is, " If I prove false, as spurious gold turns black when tested."

² Old eds. " *Cla.*"

Silver is sweeter far than honey ;

Fly like swallows,

We for our conies must get mallows ;

Who loves not his dill,¹ let him die at the gallows.

Hence, bonny girls, foot it trimly,

Smug up your beetle-brows, none look grimly ;

To show a pretty foot, O 'tis seemly !

[Exit all except SOTO : as he is going out,

Enter CARDOCHIA, who stays him.

Card. Do you hear, you gipsy ? gipsy !

Soto. Me ?

Card. There's a young gipsy newly entertain'd ; 150
Sweet gipsy, call him back for one two words,
And here's a jewel for thee.

Soto. I'll send him.

Card. What's his name ?

Soto. Andrew.

[Exit.

Card. A very handsome fellow ; I ha' seen courtiers
Jet² up and down in their full bravery,³
Yet here's a gipsy worth a drove of 'em.

Re-enter JOHN.

John. With me, sweetheart ?

Card. Your name is Andrew ?

¹ Another form of *dell*. ("The second bird of this feather is a dell, and that is a young wench ripe for the act of generation, but as yet not spoiled of her maidenhead."—Grosart's *Dekker*, iii. 106.)

² Strut.

³ Finery.

John. Yes.

Card. You can tell fortunes, Andrew?

John. I could once,

160

But now I ha' lost that knowledge ; I'm in haste,
And cannot stay to tell you yours.

Card. I cannot tell yours then ;
And 'cause' you're in haste, I'm quick ; I am a
maid——

John. So, so, a maid quick ?

Card. Juanna Cardochia,
That's mine own name ; I am my mother's heir
Here to this house, and two more.

John. I buy no lands.

Card. They shall be given you, with some plate and
money,

And free possession during life of me,
So the match like you ; for so well I love you,
That I, in pity of this trade of gipsying,
Being base, idle, and slavish, offer you
A state to settle you, my youth and beauty,
Desir'd by some brave Spaniards, so I may call you
My husband : shall I, Andrew ?

170

John. 'Las ! pretty soul,
Better stars guide you ! may that hand of Cupid
Ache, ever shot this arrow at your heart !
Sticks there one such indeed ?

Card. I would there did not,
Since you'll not pluck it out.

John. Good sweet, I cannot ;
For marriage, 'tis a law amongst us gipsies

180

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Diego. Love thee, Juanna? 200
 Is my life mine? it is but mine so long
 As it shall do thee service.

Card. There's a young¹ gipsy newly entertain'd.

Diego. A handsome rascal; what of him?

Card. That slave in obscene language courted me,
 Drew reals² out, and would have bought my body,
 Diego, from thee.

Diego. Is he so itchy? I'll cure him.

Card. Thou shalt not touch the villain, I'll spin his fate;
 Woman strikes sure, fall the blow ne'er so late. 210

Diego. Strike on, since³ thou wilt be a striker.⁴

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.

A Room in FERNANDO'S House.

Enter FERNANDO, FRANCISCO, PEDRO, and LOUIS.

Fer. See, Don Louis; an arm,⁵
 The strongest arm in Spain, to the full length
 Is stretch'd to pluck old Count Alvarez home
 From his sad banishment.

Louis. With longing eyes,
 My lord, I expect the man: your lordship's pardon,
 Some business calls me from you.

¹ A MS. correction in Dyce's copy of ed. 1.—Old eds. "younger."

² Spanish sixpences.

³ A MS. correction in Dyce's copy of ed. 1.—Old eds. "sinne" and "sin."

⁴ *Striker* was a cant term for a dissolute person.

⁵ A MS. correction in Dyce's copy of ed. 1.—Old eds. "army."

Fer. Prithee, Don Louis,
Unless th' occasion be too violent,
Stay and be merry with us ; all the gipsies
Will be here presently.

Louis. I'll attend your lordship
Before their sports be done.

Fer. Be your own carver.¹ [Exit LOUIS. 10
[To FRAN.] Not yet shake off these fetters ? I see a son
Is heavy when a father carries him
On his 'old heart.

Fran. Could I set up my rest²
That he were lost, or taken prisoner,
I could hold truec with sorrow ; but to have him
Vanish I know not how, gone none knows whither,
'Tis that mads me.

Ped. You said he sent a letter.

Fran. A letter ? a mere riddle ; he's gone to see[k]
His fortune in the wars ; what wars have we ?
Suppose we had, goes any man to th' field 20
Naked, unfurnish'd both [of] arms and mōney ?

Fer. Come, come, he's gone a-wenching ; we in our
youth
Ran the self-same bias.

Enter DIEGO.

Diego. The gipsies, my lord, are come.

¹ "Be your own carver" = follow your inclination, adopt any course you think fit. Nashe (in the *Unfortunate Traveller*) has the expression, "I could (quoth I) acquit myself otherwise, but it is not for a stranger to be his own carver in revenge."—*Works*, ed. Grosart, v. 83.

² "Set up my rest" = be assured. An expression borrowed from the game of primero. See Nares s. REST.

Fer. Are they? let them enter. . . . [Exit DIEGO.
My lord De Cortes, send for your wife and daughter;
Good company is good physic: take the pains
To seat yourselves in my great chamber. See,¹
They are here.— [Exit FRANCISCO and PEDRO.

Enter ALVAREZ, GUIAMARA, CONSTANZA, CHRISTIANA,
JOHN, RODERIGO, ANTONIO, CARLO, SANCHO, and
SOTO, *disguised as before.*

What's your number?

San. The figure of nine casts us all up, my lord.

Fer. Nine? let me see—you are ten, sure. 30

Soto. That's our poet, he stands for a cipher.

Fer. Ciphers make numbers:—what plays have you?

Alv. Five or six, my lord.

Fer. It's well so many-already.

Soto. We are promised a very merry tragedy, if all hit
right, of Cobby Nobby.

Fer. So, so; a merry tragedy! there is a way
Which the Italians and the Frenchmen use;
That is, on a word given, or some slight plot,
The actors will extempore fashion out 40
Scenes neat and witty.

Alv. We can do that, my lord;
Please you bestow the subject.

Fer. Can you?—Come hither,
You master poet: to save you a labour,
Look you, against your coming I projected

¹ "See they," &c. These words are given to "Al" in ed. 1.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Whom make a very rake-hell, a debosh'd¹ fellow.

This point, I think, will show well.

Rod. This of the picture?

It will indeed, my lord.

San. My lord, what part play I?

70

Fer. What parts dost use to play?

San. If your lordship has ever a coxcomb, I think I could fit you.

Fer. I thank your coxcombship.

Soto. Put a coxcomb upon a lord!

Fer. There are parts to serve you all; go, go, make ready,

And call for what you want. [*Exit.*

Alv. Give me the plot; our wits are put to trial.

What's the son's name? Lorenzo: that's your part.

[*To RODERIGO.*

Look only you to that;—these I'll dispose: 80

Old Don Averó, mine; Hialdo, Lollo,

Two servants,—you for them. [*To SANCHO and SOTO.*

San. One of the foolish knaves give me; I'll be Hialdo.

Soto. And I, Lollo.

San. Is there a banquet in the play? we may call for what we will.

Rod. Yes, here is a banquet.

San. I'll go, then, and bespeak an ocean of sweet-meats, marmalade, and custards. 90

Alv. Make haste to know what you must do.

¹ Old form of *debauched*.

San. Do ? call for enough ; and when my belly is full, fill my pockets.

Solo. To a banquet there must be wine ; fortune's a scurvy whore, if she makes not my head sound like a rattle, and my heels dance the canaries.¹

Alv. So, so ; despatch whilst we employ our brains To set things off to th' life.

Rod. I'll be straight with you.—

[*Exeunt all except RODERIGO.*

Why does my father put this trick on me ;
Spies he me through my vizard ? if he does, 100
He's not the king of Spain, and 'tis no treason ;
If his invention jet upon a stage,
Why should not I use action ? A debosh'd fellow !
A very rake-hell ! this 'reflects on me,
And I'll retort it : grown a poet, father ?
No matter in what strain your play must run,
But I shall fit you for a roaring son. [Exit.]

SCENE III.

A large Apartment in FERNANDO'S House.

Enter FERNANDO, FRANCISCO, PEDRO, DIEGO, MARIA, CLARA, and Servants.

Fer. Come, ladies, take your places. [*Flourish within.*]

This their music ?

'Tis very handsome : O, I wish this room

¹ A lively dance.

Were freighted but with [pleasures¹], noble friends,
As are to you my welcomes!—Begin there, masters.

San. [*within.*] Presently, my lord; we want but a cold
capon for a property.

Fer. Call, call for one.

Enter SANCHO as Prologue.

Now they begin.

San. Both short and sweet some say is best;
We will not only be sweet, but short:

Take you pepper in the nose,² you mar our sport. 10

Fer. By no means pepper.

San. Of your love measure us forth but one span;
We do though not the best, the best we can. [*Exit.*]

Fer. A good honest gipsy!

Enter ALVAREZ (as AVERO), and SOTO (as LOLLIO).

Alv. Slave, where's my son Lorenzo?

Soto. I have sought him, my lord, in all four elements:
in earth, my shoes are full of gravel; in water, I drop at
nose with sweating; in air, wheresoever I heard noise of
fiddlers, or the wide mouths of gallon pots roaring; and in
fire, what chimney soever I saw smoking with good cheer,
for my master's dinner, as I was in hope. 21

Alv. Not yet come home? before on this old tree
Shall grow a branch so blasted, I'll hew it off,

¹ The bracketed word was inserted by Dyce.

² "Take you pepper in the nose" = if you be angry, take offence.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Enter RODERIGO (as LORENZO).

Rod. I sit like an owl¹. in the ivy-bush of a tavern ; Hialdo, I have drawn red wine from the vintner's own hogshead.

San. Here's two more, pierce them too.

Rod. Old Don, whom I call father, am I thy son ? if I be, flesh me with gold, fat me with silver ; had I Spain in this hand, and Portugal in this, puff it should fly : where's the money I sent for ?—I'll tickle you for a rake-hell !

[Aside.

San. Not a marvedi.²

Alv. Thou shalt have none of me.

Soto. Hold his nose³ to the grin'stone, my lord.

60

Rod. I shall have none ?

Alv. Charge me a case⁴ of pistols ;

What I have built I'll ruin : shall I suffer

A slave to set his foot upon my heart ?

A son ? a barbarous villain ? or if heaven save thee

Now from my justice, yet my curse pursues thee.

Rod. Hialdo, carbonado⁵ thou the old rogue my father.

San. Whilst you slice into collops the rusty gammon his man there.

68

¹ " 'To look like an owl in an ivy-bush' is a proverbial expression : see Ray's *Proverbs*, p. 61, ed. 1768. A tuft or bush of ivy was formerly hung out at the door of a vintner."—*Dyce*.

² See note 4, p. 136.

³ " i.e., confine him to a short allowance."—Editor of 1816.

⁴ "Case of pistols" = pair of pistols.

⁵ i.e., cut into rashers for broiling.

Rod. No money? Can taverns stand without anon, anon? fiddlers live without scraping? taffeta girls look plump without pampering? If you will not lard me with money, give me a ship, furnish me to sea.

Alv. To have thee hanged for piracy?

San. Trim, tram, hang master, hang man!

Rod. Then send me to the West Indies, buy me some office there.

Alv. To have thy throat cut for thy quarrelling?

Rod. Else send me and my ningle¹ Hialdo to the wars.

San. A match; we'll fight dog, fight bear.

79

Enter ANTONIO (as HERNANDO).

*Alv.*² O dear Hernando, welcome!—Clap wings to your heels,

[To SOTO.]

And pray my worthy friends bestow upon me
Their present visitation.³—

[Exit⁴ SOTO.]

Lorenzo, see the anger of a father;

Although it be as loud and quick as thunder,

Yet 'tis done instantly: cast off thy wildness,

Be mine, be mine, for I to call thee home

Have, with my honour'd friend here Don. Hernando,

Provided thee a wife.

Rod. A wife! is she handsome? is she rich? is she fair? is she witty? is she honest? hang honesty! has she a sweet face, cherry-cheek, strawberry-lip, white skin, dainty eye, pretty foot, delicate legs, as there's a girl now?

92

¹ Favourite.

² Ed. 2, "visitations."

³ Old eds. "An."

⁴ Not marked in old eds.

Ant. It is a creature both for birth and fortunes,
And for most excellent graces of the mind,
Few like her are¹ in Spain.

Rod. When shall I see her?—
Now, father, pray take your curse off.

Alv. I do: the lady
Lives from Madrill very near fourteen leagues,
But thou shalt see her picture.

Rod. That! that! most ladies in these days are but very
fine pictures.

100

*Enter CARLO, JOHN, GUIAMARA, CONSTANZA, and
CHRISTIANA (as friends of AVERO).*

Alv. Ladies, to you first welcome; my lords, Alonzo,
And you worthy marquis, thanks for these honours.—
Away you! [Exit.² SANCHO
To th' cause now of this meeting. My son Lorenzo,
Whose wildness you all know, comes now to th' lure,
Sits gently; has call'd home his wandering thoughts,
And now will marry.

Const. A good wife fate send him!

Gui. One staid may settle him.

Rod. Fly to the mark, sir; show me the wench, or her
face, or anything I may know 'tis a woman fit for me. 111

Alv. She is not here herself, but here's her picture.

[Shows a picture.

Fer. My lord De Carcomo, pray, observe this.

Fran. I do, attentively.—Don Pedro, mark it.

¹ Omitted in ed. 2.

² Not marked in old eds.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

up to the top of that hill, and headlong hurl myself into that abyss of waves, ere I would touch the skin of such rough haberdine,¹ for the breath of her picture stinks hither.

A noise within. Re-enter, in a hurry, JOHN, DIEGO, SANCHE, and SOTO, with CARDOCHIA.

Fer. What tumult's this?

San. Murder, murder, murder!

Soto. One of our gipsies is in danger of hanging, hanging!

Ped. Who is hurt?

Diego. 'Tis I, my lord, stabbed by this gipsy.

John. He struck me first, and I'll not take a blow. 150
From any Spaniard breathing.

Ped. Are you so brave?

Fer. Break up your play; lock all the doors.

Diego. I faint, my lord.

Fran. Have him to a surgeon.—

[*Servants remove DIEGO.*

How fell they out?

Card. O, my good lord, these gipsies when they lodg'd
At my house, I had a jewel from my pocket
Stolen by this villain.

John. 'Tis most false, my lords;
Her own hands gave it me.

Const. She that calls him villain,
Or says he stole——

¹ Inferior salt-cod.

Fer. Hoyday! we hear your scolding. 159

Card. And the hurt gentleman finding it in his bosom,
For that he stabb'd him.

Fer. Hence with all the gipsies!

Ped. Ruffians and thieves; to prison with 'em all!

Alv. My lord, we'll leave engagements in plate and
money

For all our safe forthcoming; punish not all
For one's offence; we'll prove ourselves no thieves.

San. O Soto, I make buttons! ¹

Soto. Would I could make some, and leave this trade!

Fer. Iron him then, let the rest go free; but stir not
One foot out of Madrill. Bring you in your witness. 169

[*Exeunt* JOHN in custody of Servants, ALVAREZ,
GUIAMARA, CONSTANZA, CHRISTIANA, ANTO-
NIO, CARLO, and CARDOCHIA.]

Soto. Prick him with a pin, or pinch him by the
elbow; anything.

San. My lord Don Pedro, I am your ward; we have
spent a little money to get a horrible deal of wit, and
now I am weary of it.

Ped. My runaways turn'd jugglers, fortune-tellers?

Soto. No great fortunes.

Fer. To prison with 'em both: a gentleman play the
ass!

San. If all gentlemen that play the ass should to

¹ "His tail makes buttons, i.e. he is in great fear, a phrase occurring in Florio, ed. 1611, pp. 209, 276; Yorkshire Dialogue, 1697, p. 87." —Halliwell. Cf. vol. ii. p. 17.

PRISON, you must widen your jails.—Come, Soto, I scorn
to beg ; set thy foot to mine, and kick at shackles. 181

Fer. So so ; away with 'em !

Soto. Send all our company after, and we'll play there,
and be as merry as you here.

[*Exeunt* SANCHO and SOTO with Servants.

Fer. Our comedy turn'd tragical ! Please you, lords,
walk :

This actor here and I must change a word,
And I come to you.

Fran. } Well, my lord, your pleasure.
Ped., &c. }

[*Exeunt all except* FERNANDO and RODERIGO.

Fer. Why, couldst thou think in any base disguise
To blind my sight ? fathers have eagles' eyes :
But pray, sir, why was this done ? why, when I thought
you

190

Fast lock'd in Salamanca at your study,
Leap'd you into a gipsy ?

Rod. Sir, with your pardon,
I shall at fit time to you show cause for all.

Fer. Meantime, sir, you have got a trade to live by :
Best to turn player ; an excellent ruffian, ha !
But know, sir, when I had found you out, I gave you
This project of set purpose ; 'tis all myself ;
What the old gipsy spake must be my language ;
Nothing are left me but my offices
And thin-fac'd honours ; and this very creature, 200
By you so scorn'd, must raise me by your marrying her.

Rod. You would not build your glory on my ruins ?

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Fer. Well, though my present state stands now on
ice,

I'll let it crack and fall rather than bar thee
Of thy content ; this lady shall go by then.

Rod. Hang let her there, or anywhere I

Fer. That young lannard,¹

Whom you have such a mind to, if you can whistle her
To come to fist, make trial ; play the young falconer ;
I will nor mar your marriage nor yet make ; 232
Beauty, no wealth,—wealth, ugliness,—which you will,
take.

Rod. I thank you, sir. [*Exit FERNANDO.*—Put on
your mask, good madam, [*To the picture.*
The sun will spoil your face else. [*Exit.*

¹ A species of hawk.

SCENE I.

A Room in FERNANDO'S House.

FERNANDO, FRANCISCO, PEDRO, RODERIGO, CLARA, and MARIA, *pass over the stage from church: as the others exeunt, FERNANDO stays RODERIGO.*

Fer. Thou hast now the wife of thy desires.

Rod. Sir, I have,

And in her every blessing that makes life
Loath to be parted with.

Fer. Noble she is,

And fair; has to enrich her blood and beauty,
Plenty of wit, discourse, behaviour, carriage.

Rod. I owe you duty for a double birth,
Being in this happiness begot again,
Without which I had been a man of wretchedness.

Fer. Then henceforth, boy, learn to obey thy fate;
'Tis fallen upon thee; know it, and embrace it; 10
Thy wife's a wanton.

Rod. A wanton?

Fer. Examine through the progress of thy youth

What capital sin,¹ what great one 'tis, for 'tis
A great one thou'st committed.

Rod. I a great ^lone?

Fer. Else heaven is not so wrathful to pour on thee
A misery sò full of bitterness:
I am thy father; think on't, and be just;
Come, do not dally.

Rod. Pray, my lord——

Fer. Fool, 'twere
Impossible that justice should rain down
In such a frightful horror without cause.
Sir, I will know it; rather blush thou didst
An act thou dar'st not name, than that it has
A name to be known by.

20

Rod. Turn from me then,
And as my guilt sighs out this monster,—rape,
O, do not lend an ear!

Fer. Rape? fearful!

Rod. Hence,
Hence springs my due reward.

Fer. Thou'rt none of mine,
Or if thou be'st, thou dost belie the stamp²
Of thy nativity.

Rod. Forgive me!

Fer. Had she,
Poor wrongèd soul, whoe'er she was, no friend,
Nor father, to revenge? had she no tongue
To roar her injuries?

30

¹ Old eds. "sins."

² So ed. 2.—Ed. 1 "stamps."

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Cla. I was, but now am
Righted in noble satisfaction.

Rod. How can I turn mine eyes, and not behold 50
On every side my shame?

Fer. No more : hereafter
We shall have time to talk at large of all :
Love her that's now thine own ; do, Roderigo ;
She's far from what I character'd.

Cla. My care
Shall live about me to deserve your love.

Rod. Excellent Clara !—Fathers both, and mother,
I will redeem my fault.

Fer. }
Ped. } Our blessings dwell on ye !
Mar. }

Re-enter FRANCISCO with LOUIS.

Louis. Married to Roderigo ?

Fran. Judge yourself :
See where they are. [Exit.

Louis. Is this your husband, lady ?

Cla. He is, sir : heaven's great hand, that on record
Fore-points the equal union of all hearts, 61
Long since decreed what this day hath been perfected.

Louis. 'Tis well then ; I am free, it seems.

Cla. Make smooth,
My lords, those clouds, which on your brow deliver
Emblems of storm ;¹ I will, as far as honour

¹ Ed. 2, "storms."

May privilege, deserve a noble friendship
As you from me deserve a worthy memory.

Louis. Your husband has prov'd himself a friend [to
me],

Trusty and tried; he's welcome, I may say,
From the university.

Rod. To a new school
Of happy knowledge, Louis.

70

Louis. Sir, I am
Not so poor [as] to put this injury up:
The best blood flows within you is the price.

Rod. Louis, for this time calm your anger; and if
I do not give you noble satisfaction,
Call me to what account you please.

Louis. So, so.—I come for justice t'ye,
And you shall grant it.

Fer. Shall and will.

Louis. With speed too;
My poor friend bleeds the whiles.

Fer. You shall yourself,
Before we part, receive the satisfaction
You come for.—Who attends?

80

Servant [within.] My lord?

Fer. The prisoner!

Servant [within.] He attends your lordship's pleasure.

Enter CONSTANZA, GUIAMARA, and ALVAREZ.

Louis. What would this girl?
Foh, no tricks; get you to your cabin, huswife;
We have no ear for ballads.

Fer. Take her away.

Cla. A wondrous lovely¹ creature !

Const. Noble gentlemen,
If a poor maid's, a gipsy-virgin's tears
May soften the hard edge of angry justice,
Then grant me gracious hearing ; as you're merciful,
I beg my husband's life !

Fer. Thy husband's, little one ?

Const. Gentle sir, our plighted troths are chronicled
In that white book above which notes the secrets 91
Of every thought and heart ; he is my husband,
I am his wife.

Louis. Rather his whore.

Const. Now, trust me,
You're no good man to say so ; I am honest,
'Deed, la, I am ; a poor soul, that deserves not
Such a bad word : were you a better man
Than you are, you do me wrong.

Louis. The toy grows angry !

Cla. And it becomes her sweetly ; troth, my lord,
I pity her.

Red. I thank you, sweet.²

Louis. Your husband,
You'll say, is no thief

Const. Upon my conscience,
He is not.

Louis. Dares not strike a man.

Const. Unworthily

¹ A MS. correction in Dyce's copy of ed. 1.—Old eds. "lively."

² A MS. correction in Dyce's copy of ed. 1.—Old eds. "sir."

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

I see it¹ in your eyes, 'tis a sweet sunbeam,
 Let it shine out ; and to adorn your praise,
 The prayers of the poor shall crown your days,
 And theirs are sometimes heard.²

Fer. Beshrew the girl,
 She has almost melted me to tears !

Louis. Hence, trifler !—Call in my friends !

Enter JOHN, DIEGO, CARDOCHIA, and Servants.

What hope of ease ?

Diego. Good hope, but still I smart ;
 The worst is in my pain.

Louis. The price is high
 Shall buy thy vengeance : to receive a wound 130
 By a base villain's hand, it mad[den]s me.

John. Men subject to th' extremity of law
 Should carry peace about 'em to their graves ;
 Else, were you nobler than the blood you boast of,
 Could any way, my lord, derive you, know
 I would return sharp answer to your slanders ;
 But it suffices, I am none of ought
 Your rage miterms me.

Louis. None of 'em ? no rascal ?

John. No rascal.

Louis. Nor no thief ? 140

John. Ask her that's my accuser : could your eyes

¹ Old eds. "it is."

² A MS. correction in Dyce's copy of ed. 1.—Old eds. "something hard."

Pierce through the secrets of her soul desires,
 You might without a partial judgment look into
 A woman's lust and malice.

Car. My good lords,
 What I have articulated against this fellow,
 I justify for truth.

John. On then, no more :
 This being true she says, I have deserv'd
 To die.

Fer. We sit not here to bandy words,
 But minister [the] law, and that condemns thee
 For theft unto the gallows.

Const. O my misery !
 Are you all marble-breasted ? are your bosoms
 Hoop'd round with steel ? to cast away a man,
 More worthy life and honours than a thousand
 Of such as only pray unto the shadow
 Of abus'd greatness !

150

John. 'Tis in vain to storm ;
 My fate is here determin'd.

Const. Lost creature,
 Art thou grown dull too ? is my love so cheap
 That thou court'st thy destruction 'cause I love thee ?—
 My lords, my lords !—Speak, Andrew, prithee, now,
 Be not so cruel to thyself and me ;
 One word of thine will do't.

160

Fer. Away with him !
 To-morrow is his day of execution.

John. Even when you will.

Const. Stay, man ; thou shalt not go,

Here are more women yet.—Sweet madam, speak !
 You, lady, you methinks should have some feeling
 Of tenderness ; you may be touch'd as I am :
 Troth, wete't your cause, I'd weep with you, and join
 In earnest suit for one you held so dear.

Cla. My lord, pray speak in his behalf.

Rod. I would,

But dare not ; 'tis a fault so clear and manifest. 170

Louis. Back with him to his dungeon !

John. Heaven can tell

I sorrow not to die, but to leave her
 Who whiles I live is my life's comforter.

[*Exit with Servants.*

Card. Now shall I be reveng'd !

[*Aside, and exit with DIEGO.*

Const. O me unhappy !

[*Swoons.*

Fer. See, the girl falls !

Some one look to her.

Cla. 'Las, poor maid !

Gui. Pretiosa !

She does recover : mine honourable lord——

Fer. In vain ; what is't ?

Gui. Be pleas'd to give me private audience ;
 I will discover something shall advantage
 The noblest of this land. 180

Fer. Well, I will hear thee ;
 Bring in the girl.

[*Exeunt* FERNANDO, MARIA, PEDRO, CLARA,
 RODERIGO, GUIAMARA, and CONSTANZA :
 ALVAREZ stays LOUIS.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Louis. Wonderful scholar !
Miracle of artists ! Alvarez living ?
And near Madrill too ? now, for heaven's sake, where ?
That's all, and I am thine.

Alv. Walk off, my lord,
To the next field, you shall know all.

Louis. Apace, then !
I listen to thee with a greedy ear :
The miserable and the fortunate
Are alike in this, they cannot change their fate.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.

*A field.*¹

Enter ALVAREZ and LOUIS.

Alv. Good, good : you would fain kill him, and
revènge
Your father's death ?

Louis. I would.

Alv. Bravely, or scurvily ?²

Louis. Not basely, for the world !

Alv. We are secure. [*Produces two swords.*
Young Louis, two more trusty blades than these
Spain has not in her arm[or]y : with this
Alvarez slew thy father ; and this other

¹ The stage-direction in the old copies is, "*Ex. at one door ; Enter presently at another.*"

² A MS. correction in Dyce's copy of ed. 1.—Old eds. "securely."

Was that the king of France wore when great Charles
 In a set battle took him prisoner ;
 Both I resign to thee.

Louis. This is a new mystery.

Alv. Now see this naked bosom ; turn the points
 Of either on this bulwark, if thou covet'st,
 Out of a' sprightly youth and manly thirst
 Of vengeance, blood ; if blood be thy ambition,
 Then call to mind the fatal blow that struck
 De Castro, thy brave father, to his grave ;
 Remember who it was that gave that blow,
 His enemy Alvarez : hear, and be sudden,
 Behold Alvarez !

Louis. Death, I am deluded !

Alv. Thou art incredulous ; as fate is certain,
 I am the man.

Louis. Thou that butcher ?

20

Alv. Tremble not, young man, trust me, I have wept
 Religiously to wash off from my conscience
 The stain of my offence : twelve years and more,
 Like to a restless pilgrim I have run
 From foreign lands to lands to find out death.
 I'm weary of my life ; give me a sword :
 That thou mayst know with what a perfect zeal
 I honour old De Castro's memory,
 I'll fight with thee ; I would not have thy hand
 Dipp'd in a wilful murder ; I could wish
 For one hour's space I could pluck back from time
 But thirty of my years, that in my fall
 Thou might'st deserve report : now if thou conquer'st,

30

Thou canst not triumph ; I'm half dead already,
Yet I'll not start a foot.

Louis. Breathes there a spirit
In such a heap of age ?¹

Alv. O, that I had
A son of equal growth with thee, to tug
For reputation ! by thy father's ashes,
I would not kill thee for another Spain,
Yet now I'll do my best. Thou art amaz'd ;
Come on.

40

Louis. Twelve tedious winters' banishment ?
'Twas a long time.

Alv. Could they redeem thy father,
Would every age had been twelve ages, Louis,
And I for penance every age a-dying !
But 'tis too late to wish.

Louis. I am o'ercome ;
Your nobleness hath conquer'd me : here ends
All strife between our families, and henceforth
Acknowledge me for yours.

Alv. O, thou reviv'st
Fresh horrors to my fact !² for in thy gentleness
I see my sin anew.

Louis. Our peace is made ;
Your life shall be my care : 'twill be glad news
To all our noble friends.

50

¹ "A MS. correction *ubi sup.* Old eds. 'rage ;' which the editor of 1816 altered to 'rags.' Compare *The Old Law* [vol. ii. p. 149].

² 'Take hence that *pile of years.*'—*Dyce.*

³ Guilt.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Const. This is new divinity.

Gui. My lord, behold this child well : in her face
You may observe, by curious insight, something
More than belongs, to every common birth.

Fer. True, 'tis a pretty child.

Gui. The glass of misery
Is, after many a change of desperate fortune,
At length run out : you had a daughter call'd
Constanza ?

Fer. Ha !

Gui. A sister, Guiamara,
Wife to the Count Alvarez ?

Fer. Peace, O, peace !

20

Gui. And to that sister's charge you did commit
Your infant daughter, in whose birth your wife,
Her mother, died ?

Fer. Woman, thou art too cruel !

Const. What d'ye mean, granam ? 'las, the noble-
man

Grows angry !

Fer. Not I, indeed I do not :—
But why d'ye use me thus ?

Gui. Your child and sister,
As you suppos'd, were drown'd ?

Fer. Drown'd ? talking creature !
Suppos'd ?

Gui. They live ; Fernando, from my hand,
Thy sister's hand, receive thine own Constanza,
The sweetest, best child living.

Const. Do you mock me ?

30

Fer. Torment me on ; yet more, more yet, and spare not,

My heart is now a-breaking ; now !

Gui. O brother !

Am I so far remov'd off from your memory,
As that you will not know me ? I expected
Another welcome home : look on this casket ;

[*Showing casket.*]

The legacy your lady left her daughter,
When to her son she gave her crucifix.

Fer. Right, right ; I know ye now.

Gui. In all my sorrows,

My comfort has been here, she should be [yours],
Be yours [at last].—Constanza, kneel, sweet child, 40
To thy old father.

Const. How ? my father ?

[*Kneels.*]

Fer. Let not

Extremity of joys ravish life from me
Too soon, heaven, I beseech thee ! Thou art my sister,
My sister Guiamara ! How have mine eyes
Been darken'd all this while ! 'tis she !

Gui. 'Tis, brother ;

And this Constanza, now no more a stranger,
No Pretiosa henceforth.

Fer. My soul's treasure,

Live to an age of goodness ; and so thrive
In all thy ways, that thou mayst die to live !

Const. But must I call you father ?

Fer. Thou wilt rob me else

50

Of that felicity, for whose sake only

I am ambitious of being young again :

Rise, rise, mine own Constanza !

Const. [*rising*]. 'Tis a new name,
But 'tis a pretty one ; I may be bold
To make a suit t'ye ?

Fer. Anything.

Const. O father,
And if you be my father, think upon
Don John my husband ! without him, alas,
I can be nothing !

Fer. As I without thee ;
Let me alone, Constanza.—Tell me, tell me,
Lives yet Alvarez ?

Gui. In your house.

Fer. Enough : 60
Cloy me not ; let me by degrees digest¹
My joys.—Within, my lords Francisco, Pedro !
Come all at once ! I have a world within me ;
I am not mortal sure, I am not mortal :

Enter FRANCISCO, PEDRO, MARIA, RODERIGO, *and*
CLARA.

My honourable lord[s], partake my blessings ;
[The] Count Alvarez lives here in my house ;
Your son, my lord Francisco, Don John, is
The condemn'd man falsely accus'd of theft ;
This, my lord Pedro, is my sister Guiamara ;

¹ Old form of "digest."

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Const. You promis'd me——

Fer. I did.—

My lord of Carcomo, you see their hearts
Are join'd already, so let our consents
To this wish'd marriage.

Fran. I forgive thine errors ;
Give me thy hand.

90

Fer. Me thine.¹—But wilt thou love
My daughter, my Constanza ?

John. As my bliss.

Const. I thee as life, youth, beauty, anything
That makes life comfortable.

Fer. Live together
One, ever one !

Fran.

Rod., &c. } And heaven crown your happiness !

Ped. Now, sir, how like you a prison ?

San. As gallants do a tavern, being stopped for a
reckoning, scurvily.

Soto. Though you caged us up never so close, we
sung like cuckoos. .

100

Fer. Well, well, you be yourself now.

San. Myself?—am I out of my wits, Soto ?

Fer. Here now are none but honourable friends :
Will you, to give a farewell to the life
You ha' led as gipsies, these being now found
none,
But noble in their births, alter'd in fortunes,

¹ "Me thine."—Addressed to Constanza.

Give it a merry shaking by the hand,
And cry adieu to folly?

San. We'll shake our hands, and our heels, if you'll
give us leave. [*A dance.* 110

Fer. On, brides and bridegrooms! to your Spanish
feasts

Invite with bent knees all these noble guests.

[*Exeunt omnes.*

WOMEN BEWARE WOMEN.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Women Beware Women. A Tragedy, By Tho. Middleton, Gent. London: Printed for Humphrey Moseley, 1657. 8vo.

Women Beware Women forms part of a volume entitled, *Two New Plays.*

Vis. { *More Dissemblers
besides Women.
Women beware
Women.*

Written by Tho. Middleton, Gent. London, Printed for Humphrey Moseley, and are to be sold at his Shop at the Prince's Arms in St. Paul's Churchyard, 1657. 8vo.

The following address, by Humphrey Moseley, is prefixed to the volume :

“TO THE READER.

“When these amongst others of Mr. Thomas Middleton's excellent poems came to my hands, I was not a little confident but that his name would prove as great an inducement for thee to read as me to print them ; since those issues of his brain that have already seen the sun have by their worth gained themselves a free entertainment amongst all that are ingenious : and I am most certain that these will no way lessen his reputation nor hinder his admission to any noble and recreative spirits. All that I require at thy hands is to continue the author in his deserved esteem, and to accept of my endeavours, which have ever been to please thee.

Farewell.”

Women Beware Women is included in the 5th vol. of *A Continuation of Dodsley's Old Plays*, 1816.

“The Foundation of this Play is borrow'd from a Romance called *Hyppolito and Isabella*, octavo.”—Langbaine's *Acc. of Engl. Dram. Poets*, p. 374.

UPON THE TRAGEDY OF MY FAMILIAR
ACQUAINTANCE, THO. MIDDLETON.

Women beware Women; 'tis a true text
Never to be forgot; drabs of state vex
Have plots, poisons, mischiefs that seldom miss,
To murder virtue with a venom-kiss.
Witness this worthy tragedy, exprest
By him that well deserv'd among the best
Of poets in his time: he knew the rage,
Madness of women cross'd, and for the stage
Fitted their humours; hell-bred malice, strife
Acted in state, presented to the life.
I that have seen't can say, having just cause,
Never came tragedy off with more applause.

NATH. RICHARDS.¹

¹ He wrote *The Tragedy of Messalin[a]*, 1640, a poor play; *The
Celestiall Publican, a Sacred Poem*, 1630.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

WOMEN BEWARE WOMEN.



ACT I.

SCENE I.

An outer Room in the House of LEANTIO'S Mother.

Enter LEANTIO, BIANCA, and Mother.

Moth. Thy sight was never yet more precious to me ;
Welcome, with all th' affection of a mother,
That comfort can express from natural love !
Since thy birth-joy—a mother's chiefest gladness,
After sh'as undergone her curse of sorrows—
Thou wast not more dear to me than this hour
Presents thee to my heart : welcome again !

Lean. 'Las, poor affectionate soul, how her joys speak
to me !

I have observ'd it often, and I know it is
The fortune commonly of knavish children
To have the loving'st mothers.

10

[*Aside.*

Moth. What's this gentlewoman ?

Lean. O, you have nam'd the most unvalu'dst¹ purchase

That youth of man had ever knowledge of!

As often as I look upon that treasure,

And know it to be mine—there lies the blessing—

It joys me that I ever was ordain'd

To have a being, and to live 'mongst men;

Which is a fearful living, and a poor one,

Let a man truly think on't:

To have the toil and griefs of fourscore years

20

Put up in a white sheet, tied with two knots;

Methinks it should strike earthquakes in adulterers,

When even the very sheets they commit sin in

May prove, for aught they know, all their last garments.

O what a mark were there for women then!

But beauty, able to content a conqueror

Whom earth could scarce content, keeps me in compass:

I find no wish in me bent sinfully

To this man's sister, or to that man's wife;

In love's name let 'em keep their honesties,

30

And cleave to their own husbands,—'tis their duties:

Now when I go to church I can pray handsomely,

Nor come like gallants only to see faces,

As if I went to market still on Sundays.

I must confess I'm guilty of one sin, mother,

More than I brought into the world with me,

But that I glory in; 'tis theft, but noble

As ever greatness yet shot up withal.

¹ *Unvalued* = invaluable.

Moth. How's that?

Lean. Never to be repented, mother,
 Though sin be death; I had died, if I had not sinn'd } 40
 And here's my masterpiece; do you now behold her!
 Look on her well, she's mine; look on her better;
 Now say if't be not the best piece of theft
 That ever was committed? and I've my pardon for't,—
 'Tis scal'd from heaven by marriage.

Moth. Married to her!

Lean. You must keep counsel, mother, I'm undone
 else;
 If it be known, I've lost her; do but think now
 What that loss is,—life's but a trifle to't. ✓
 From Venice, her consent and I have brought her
 From parents great in wealth, more now in rage; 50
 But let storms spend their furies; now we've got
 A shelter o'er our quiet innocent loves,
 We are contented: little money sh'as brought me;
 View but her face, you may see all her dowry,
 Save that which lies lock'd up in hidden virtues,
 Like jewels kept in cabinets.

Moth. You're to blame,
 If your obedience will give way to a check,
 To wrong such a perfection.

Lean. How?

Moth. Such a creature,
 To draw her from her fortune, which, no doubt,
 At the full time might have prov'd rich and noble; 60
 You know not what you've done; my life can give you,
 But little helps, and my death lesser hopes;

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Not the licentious swing of her own will,
Like some of her old school-fellows; she intends
To take out other works in a new sampler,
And frame the fashion of an honest love,
Which knows no wants, but, mocking poverty,
Brings forth more children, to make rich men wonder
At divine providence, that feeds mouths of infants,
And sends them none to feed, but stuffs their rooms
With fruitful bags, their beds with barren wombs. 100
Good mother, make not you things worse than they are
Out of your too much openness; pray take heed on't,
Nor imitate the envy of old people,
That strive to mar good sport because they're perfect:
I would have you more pitiful to youth,
Especially to your own flesh and blood.
I'll prove an excellent husband, here's my hand,
Lay in provision, follow my business roundly,
And make you a grandmother in forty weeks.
Go, pray salute her, bid her welcome cheerfully. 110

Moth. [*saluting* BIANCA]. Gentlewoman, thus much is
a debt of courtesy,
Which fashionable strangers pay each other
At a kind meeting: then there's more than one
Due to the knowledge I have of your nearness;
I'm bold to come again, and now salute you
By the name of daughter, which may challenge more
Than ordinary respect.

Lean. Why, this is well now,
And I think few mothers of threescore will mend it.

[*Aside.*

Moth. What I can bid you welcome to, is mean,
But make it all your own; we're full of wants, 120
And cannot welcome worth.

Lean. Now this is scurvy,
And spoke¹ as if a woman lack'd her teeth;
These old folks talk of nothing but defects,
Because they grow so full of 'em themselves. [Aside.]

Bian. Kind mother, there is nothing can be wanting
To her that does enjoy all her desires:
Heaven send a quiet peace with this man's love,
And I'm as rich as virtue can be poor,
Which were enough after the rate of mind
To erect temples for content plac'd here. 130
I have forsook friends, fortunes, and my country,
And hourly I rejoice in't. Here's my friends,
And few is the good number.—Thy successes,
Howe'er they look, I will still name my fortunes;
Hopeful or spiteful, they shall all be welcome:
Who invites many guests has of all sorts,
As he that traffics much drinks of all fortunes,
Yet they must all be welcome, and us'd well.
I'll call this place the place of my birth now,
And rightly too, for here my love was born, 140
And that's the birthday of a woman's joys.
You have not bid me welcome since I came.

Lean. That I did questionless.

Bian. No, sure—how was't?
I've quite forgot it.

¹ Old ed. "spake."

Lean. Thus.

[*Kisses her.*

Bian. O, sir, 'tis true,

Now I remember well; I've done thee wrong,

Pray take 't again, sir.

[*Kisses him.*

Lean. How many of these wrongs
Could I put up in an hour, and turn up the glass
For twice as many more!

Moth. Will't please you to walk in, daughter?

Bian. Thanks, sweet mother;

The voice of her that bare me is not more pleasing. 150

[*Exit with Mother.*

Lean. Though my own care and my rich master's trust
Lay their commands both on my factorship,
This day and night I'll know no other business
But her and her dear welcome. 'Tis a bitterness
To think upon to-morrow! that I must leave
Her still to the sweet hopes of the week's end;
That pleasure should be so restrain'd and curb'd
After the course of a rich work-master,
That never pays till Saturday night! marry,
It comes together in a round sum then, 160
And does more good, you'll say. O fair-ey'd Florence,
Didst thou but know what a most matchless jewel
Thou now art mistress of, a pride would take thee,
Able to shoot destruction through the bloods
Of all thy youthful sons! but 'tis great policy
To keep choice treasures in obscurest places;
Should we show thieves our wealth, 'twould make 'em
bolder;

Temptation is a devil will not stick

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Fab. I say still, she shall love him.

Guar. Yet again?

And shall she have no reason for this love?

Fab. Why, do you think that women love with reason? ★

Guar. I perceive fools are not at all hours foolish,
No more than wise men wise. [Aside.

Fab. I had a wife,
She ran mad for me; she had no reason for't,
For aught I could perceive.—What think you, lady
sister? 30

Guar. 'Twas a fit match that, being both out of their
wits;
A loving wife, it seem'd
She strove to come as near you as she could. [Aside.

Fab. And if her daughter prove not mad for love
too,
She takes not after her; nor after me,
If she prefer reason before my pleasure.—
You're an experienc'd widow, lady sister,
I pray, let your opinion come amongst us.

Liv. I must offend you then, if truth will do't,
And take my niece's part, and call't injustice ✓ 30
To force her love to one she never saw:
Maids should both see and like, all little enough;
If they love truly after that, 'tis well.
Counting the time, she takes one man till death;
That's a hard task, I tell you; but one may
Inquire at three years' end amongst young wives,
And mark how the game goes.

Fab. Why, is not man

And in one woman?

Liv. 'Tis enough for him;

! Besides, he tastes of many sundry dishes 40
! That we poor wretches never lay our lips to,
! As obedience forsooth, subjection, duty, and such kick-
! staws.

! All of our making, but serv'd in to them;
! And if we lick a finger then sometimes,
! We're not to blame, your best cooks [often] use it.

Fab. Thou'rt a sweet lady sister and a witty.

Liv. A witty! O the bud of commendation,
Fit for a girl of sixteen! I am blown, man;
I should be wise by this time; and, for instance,
I've buried my two husbands in good fashion, 50
And never mean more to marry.

Guar. No! why so, lady?

Liv. Because the third shall never bury me:
I think I'm more than witty. How think you, sir?

Fab. I have paid often fees to a counsellor
Has had a weaker brain.

Liv. Then I must tell you
You money was soon parted.

*Guar.*¹ Light her now, brother.

¹ The text is corrupt. I fear the following emendation is hardly satisfactory:—

“*Liv.* Then I must tell you
Your money was soon parted.
Fab. Like enow.
Liv. Brother, where's my niece?”

The reader will remember that the last syllable of *enow* was frequently

Liv. Where is my niece? let her be sent for straight,
 If you have any hope 'twill prove a wedding;
 'Tis fit, i'faith, she should have one sight of him,
 And stop upon't, and not be join'd in haste, 60
 As if they went to stock a new-found land.

Fab. Look out her uncle; and you're sure of her,
 Those 'two are ne'er asunder; they've been heard
 In argument at midnight; moonshine nights
 Are noondays with them; they walk out their sleeps,
 Or rather at those hours appear like those
 That walk in 'em, for so they did to me.
 Look you, I told you truth; they're like a chain,—
 Draw but one link, all follows.

Enter HIPPOLITO and ISABELLA.

Guar. O affinity,
 What piece' of excellent workmanship art thou! 70
 'Tis work clean wrought, for there's no lust but love in't,
 And that abundantly; when in stranger things
 There is no love at all but what lust brings.

Fab. On with your mask! for 'tis your part to see now,
 And not be seen: go to, make use of your time;
See what you mean to like; nay, and I charge you,
 Like what you see: do you hear me? there's no dally-
 ing;
 The gentleman's almost twenty, and 'tis time
 He were getting lawful heirs, and you a-breeding on 'em.

sounded like the adverb *now*. Between *light her now* and *like now* there is no great difference of pronunciation.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Ward. An egg may prove a chicken, then in time
 The poulterer's wife will get by't: when I am
 In game, I'm furious; came my mother's eyes 100
 In my way, I would not lose a fair end; no,
 Were she alive, but with one tooth in her head, }
 I should venture the striking out of that:
 I think of nobody when I'm in play, ✓
 I am so earnest. Coads me, my guardianer!
 Prithee, lay up my cat and cat-stick¹ safe.

Sor. Where, sir? i' the chimney-corner?

Ward. Chimney-corner!

Sor. Yes, sir; your cats are always safe i' the chimney-
 corner,

Unless they burn their coats.

Ward. Marry, that I am afraid on!

Sor. Why, then, I will bestow your cat i' the gutter, 110
 And there she's safe, I'm sure.

Ward. If I but live
 To keep a house, I'll make thee a great man,
 If meat and drink can do't. I can stoop gallantly,
 And pitch out when I list; I'm dog at a hole:
 I mar'l my guardianer does not seek a wife for me;
 I protest I'll have a bout with the maids else,
 Or contract myself at midnight to the larder-woman,
 In presence of a fool² or a sack-posset.

Guar. Ward!

¹ Dyce quotes Strutt's description of the game of tip-cat; but most readers are familiar with the game.

² A play on the words *fool* and *fowl* is intended. Cf. 3 *Henry VI.*, v. 6, ll. 18-20.

Ward. I feel myself after any exercise
Horribly prone : let me but ride, I'm lusty ;
A cock-horse, straight, i'faith !

Guar. Why, Ward, I say !

Ward. I'll forswear eating eggs in moonshine nights ;
There's ne'er a one I eat but turns into a cock
In four-and-twenty hours : if my hot blood .
Be not took down in time, sure 'twill crow shortly.

Guar. Do you hear, sir ? follow me, I must new-
school you.

Ward. School me ? I scorn that now, I am past
schooling :

~~I'm not so base to learn to write and read ;~~

I was born to better fortunes in my cradle.

[*Exeunt* GUARDIANO, the Ward, and SORDIDO.]

Fab. How do you like him, girl ? this is your husband :
Like him, or like him not, wench, you shall have him,
And you shall love him.

Liv. O, soft there, brother ! though you be a justice,
Your warrant cannot be serv'd out of your liberty ;

You may compel, out of the power of father,

Things merely harsh to a maid's flesh and blood ;

But when you come to love, there the soil alters,

You're in another country, where your laws

Are no more set by than the cacklings of geese

In Rome's great Capitol.

Fab. Marry him she shall then,

Let her agree upon love afterwards.

[*Exit.*]

Liv. You speak now, brother, like an honest mortal
That walks upon th' earth with a staff ; you were up

I' the clouds before ; you would command love,
 And so do most old folks that go without it.—
 My best and dearest brother, I could dwell here ;
 There is not such another seat on earth,
 Where all good parts better express themselves.

Hip. You'll make me blush anon. 150

Liv. 'Tis but like saying grace before a ~~feast~~ then,
 And that's most comely ; ~~thou art all a feast~~
 And she that has thee a most happy guest.

Prithee, cheer up thy¹ niece with special counsel. [*Exit.*]

Hip. I would 'twere fit to speak to her what I would ;
 but

'Twas not a thing ordain'd, heaven has forbid it ;
 And 'tis most meet that I should rather perish
 Than the decree divine receive least blemish.

~~Feed inward, you my sorrows,~~ make no noise,

Consume me silent, let me be stark dead 160

Ere the world know I'm sick. You see my honesty ;

If you befriend me, so. [*Aside.*]

Isa. Marry a fool !

Can there be greater misery to a woman
 That means to keep her days true to her husband,
 And know no other man ? so virtue wills it.

~~Why, how can I obey and honour him,~~

But I must needs commit idolatry ?

~~A fool is but the image of a man,~~

And that but ill made neither. O the heartbreakings
 Of miserable maids, where love's enforc'd ! 170

¹ Old ed. "that."

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

How long has 't been upon you? I ne'er spied it;
What a dull sight have I! how long, I pray, sir?

Hip. Since I first saw you, niece, and left Bologna.

Isa. And could you deal so unkindly with my heart,
To keep it up so long hid from my pity?

Alas! how shall I trust your love hereafter? 200

Have we pass'd through so many arguments,

And miss'd of that still, the most needful one?

Walk'd¹ out whole nights together in discourses,

And the main point forgot? we're to blame both;

This is an obstinate, wilful forgetfulness,

And faulty on both parts: let's lose no time now;

Begin, good uncle, you that feel 't; what is it?

Hip. You of all creatures, niece, must never hear on't,
'Tis not a thing ordain'd for you to know.

Isa. Not I, sir? all my joys that word cuts off; 210
You made profession once you lov'd me best;

'Twas but profession.

Hip. Yes, I do't too truly,
And fear I shall be chid for't. Know the worst then;
I love thee dearlier than an uncle can.

Isa. Why, so you ever said, and I believ'd it.

Hip. So simple is the goodness of her thoughts,
They understand not yet th' unhallow'd language
Of a near sinner; I must yet be forc'd,
Though blushes be my venture, to come nearer.—

[*Aside.*

As a man loves his wife, so love I thee. ✓

220

¹ The editor of 1618 read "Wak'd;" but compare l. 65.

✓ *Isa.* What's that?

Methought I heard ill news come toward me,
Which commonly we understand too soon,
Then over-quick at hearing; I'll prevent it,
Though my joys fare the harder, welcome it:
It shall ne'er come so near mine ear again.
Farewell all friendly solaces and discourses;
I'll learn to live without ye, for your dangers
Are greater than your comforts. What's become
Of truth in love, if such we cannot trust,

230

7 ✓ When blood, that should be love, is mix'd with lust?

[*Exit.*

Hip The worst can be but death, and let it come;
He that lives joyless, every day's his doom. [Exit.

SCENE III.

Street before the House of LEANTIO'S Mother.

Enter LEANTIO.

Lean. Methinks I'm even as dull now at departure,
As men observe great gallants the next day
After a revel;¹ you shall see 'em look
Much of my fashion, if you mark 'em well.
'Tis even a second hell to part from pleasure
When man has got a smack on't: as many holydays
Coming together makes your poor heads idle
A great while after, and are said to stick

¹ Old ed. "revels."

Fast in their fingers' ends,—even so does game
 In a new-married couple ; for the time 10
 It spoils all thrift, and indeed lies a-bed
 T' invent all the new ways for great expenses.

[BIANCA and Mother appear above.

See, and,¹ she be not got on purpose now
 Into the window to look after me !
 I've no power to go now, and¹ I should be hang'd ;
 Farewell all business ; I desire no more
 Than I see yonder : let the goods at key
 Look to themselves ; why should I toil my youth out ?
 It is but begging two or three year sooner,
 And stay with her continually : is't a match ? 20
 O, fie, what a religion have I leap'd into !
 Get out again, for shame ! the man loves best
 When his care's most, that shows his zeal to love :
 Fondness is but the idiot to² affection,
 That plays at hot-cockles with rich merchants' wives,
 Good to make sport withal when the chest's full,
 And the long warehouse cracks. 'Tis time of day
 For us to be more wise ; 'tis early with us ;
 And if they lose the morning of their affairs,
 They commonly lose the best part of the day : 30
 Those that are wealthy, and have got enough,
 'Tis after sunset with 'em ; they may rest,
 Grow fat with ease, banquet, and toy, and play,
 When such as I enter the heat o' the day,
 And I'll do't cheerfully.

¹ If.

² Compared with.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

And that disease is catching, I can tell you, 60
 Ay, and soon taken by a young man's blood,
 And that with little urging. Nay, fie, see now,
 What cause have you to weep? would I had no more,
 That have liv'd threescore years! there were, a cause,
 And¹ 'twere well thought on. Trust me, you're to
 blame;

His absence cannot last five days at utmost:
 Why should those tears be fetch'd forth? cannot love
 Be even as well express'd in a good look,
 But it must see her face still in a fountain?
 It shows like a country maid dressing her head 70
 By a dish of water: come, 'tis an old custom
 To weep for love.

Enter several Boys, several Citizens, and an Apprentice.

First Boy. Now they come, now they come!

Sec. Boy. The Duke!

Third Boy. The state[s]!

First Cit. How near, boy?

First Boy. I' the next street, sir, hard at hand.

First Cit. You, sirrah, get a standing for your mistress,
 'The best in all the city.

Appren. I have't for her, sir;
 'Twas a thing I provided for her over-night, 80
 'Tis ready at her pleasure.

First Cit. Fetch her to't then:
 Away, sir! [*Exeunt Boys, Citizens, and Apprentice.*]

Bian. What's the meaning of this hurry?
Can you tell, mother?

Moth. What a memory
Have I! I see by that years come upon me:
Why, 'tis a yearly custom and solemnity,
Religiously observ'd by the Duke and state[s],
To St. Mark's temple, the fifteenth of April;
See, if my dull brains had not quite forgot it!
'Twas happily question'd of thee; I had gone down
else,

Sat like a drone below, and never thought on't. 90
I would not, to be ten years younger again,
That you had lost the sight: now you shall see
Our Duke, a goodly gentleman of his years.

Bian. Is he old, then?

Moth. About some fifty-five.

Bian. That's no great age in man; he's then at
best

For wisdom and for judgment.

Moth. The lord Cardinal,
His noble brother—there's a comely gentleman,
And greater in devotion than in blood.

Bian. He's worthy to be mark'd.

Moth. You shall behold
All our chief states of Florence: you came fortunately 100
Against this solemn day.

Bian. I hope so always. [Music within.]

Moth. I hear 'em near us now: do you stand easily?

Bian. Exceeding well, good mother.

Moth. Take this stool.

Bian. I need it not, I thank you.

Moth. Use your will then.

Enter six Knights bare-headed, then two Cardinals, then the LORD CARDINAL, then the DUKE; after him the states of Florence by two and two, with variety of music and song. They pass over the stage in great pomp, and exeunt.

Moth. How like you, daughter?

Bian. 'Tis a noble state;

Methinks my soul could dwell upon the reverence
Of such a solemn and most worthy custom.

Did not the Duke look up? methought he saw us.

Moth. That's every one's conceit that sees a duke;
If he look steadfastly, he looks straight at them, 110
When he, perhaps, good, careful gentleman,
Never minds any, but the look he casts
Is at his own intentions, and his object
Only the public good.

Bian. Most likely so.

Moth. Come, come, we'll end this argument below.

[Exeunt above.]

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

So he heaven's bounty seems to scorn and mock
That spares free means, and spends of his own stock.

Hip. Ne'er was man's misery so soon summ'd¹ up,
Counting how truly.

Liv. Nay, I love you so, ✓
That I shall venture much to keep a change from you
So fearful as this grief will bring upon you ; 20
Faith, it even kills me when I see you faint
Under a reprehension, and I'll leave it,
Though I know nothing can be better for you.
Prithee, sweet brother, let not passion waste
The goodness of thy time and of thy fortune :
Thou keep'st the treasure of that life I love
As dearly as mine own ; and if you think
My former words too bitter, which were minister'd
By truth and zeal, 'tis but a hazarding
Of grace and virtue, and I can bring forth 30
As pleasant fruits as sensuality wishes
In all her teeming longings ; this I can do.

Hip. O, nothing that can make my wishes perfect !

Liv. I would that love of yours were pawn'd to't,
brother,
And as soon lost that way as I could win !
Sir, I could give as shrewd a lift to chastity
As any she that wears a tongue in Florence ;
Sh'ad need be a good horsewoman, and sit fast,
Whom my strong argument could not fling at last.
Prithee, take courage, man ; though I should counsel 40

¹ Old ed. "sow'd."

Another to despair, yet I am pitiful
 To thy afflictions, and will venture hard—
 I will not name for what, it is not handsome ;
 Find you the proof and praise me.

Hip. Then I fear me
 I shall not praise you in haste.

Liv. This is the comfort,
 You are not the first, brother, has attempted
 Things more forbidden than this seems to be.
 I'll minister all cordials now to you,
 Because I'll cheer you up, sir.

Hip. I'm past hope.

Liv. Love, thou shalt see me do a strange cure
 then, 50

As e'er was wrought on a disease so mortal
 And near akin to shame. When shall you see her?

Hip. Never in comfort more.

Liv. You're so impatient too!

Hip. Will you believe? death, sh'as forsworn my
 company,
 And seal'd it with a blush.

Liv. So, I perceive
 All lies upon my hands then; well, the more glory
 When the work's finish'd.

Enter Servant.

How now, sir? the news?

Ser. Madam, your niece, the virtuous Isabella,
 Is lighted now to see you.

Liv. That's great fortune ;
 Sir, your stars bless¹ you simply.—Lead her in. 60
 [*Exit* Servant.]

Hip. What's this to me ?

Liv. Your absence, gentle brother ;
 I must bestir my wits for you.

Hip. Ay, to great purpose. [*Exit.*]

Liv. Beshrew you, would I lov'd you not so well !
 I'll go to bed, and leave this deed undone :
 I am the fondest where I once affect ; ?
 The carefull'st of their healths and of their ease, forsooth,
 That I look still but slenderly to mine own :
 I take a course to pity him so much now,
 That I've none left for modesty and myself. ✓
 This 'tis to grow so liberal : you've few sisters 70
 That love their brothers' ease 'bove their own honesties ;
 But if you question my affections,
 That will be found my fault.

Enter ISABELLA.

Niece, your love's welcome.

Alas ! what draws that paleness to thy cheeks ?
 This enforc'd marriage towards ?

Isa. It helps, good aunt,
 Amongst some other griefs ; but those I'll keep
 Lock'd up in modest silence, for they're sorrows

¹ Dyce suggested this reading, but printed " Sir, your stars bless you.
 —Simple, lead her in."—Old ed. " bless ; you simple, lead," &c.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Isa. Kind, sweet, dear aunt——

Liv. No, 'twas a secret I've took special care of,
Deliver'd by your mother on her death-bed,
That's nine years now, and I'll not part from't yet,
Though ne'er was fitter time, nor greater cause for't.

Isa. As you desire the praises of a virgin——

Liv. Good sorrow, I would do thee any kindness
Not wronging secrecy or reputation.

Isa. Neither of which, as I have hope of fruit[ful]ness,
Shall receive wrong from me.

Liv. Nay, 'twould be your own wrong 110
As much as any's, should it come to that once.

Isa. I need no better means to work persuasion then.

Liv. Let it suffice, you may refuse this fool,
Or you may take him as you see occasion,
For your advantage; the best wits will do't;
You've liberty enough in your own will,
You cannot be enforc'd; there grows the flower,
If you could pick it out, makes whole life sweet
to you.

That which you call your father's command's nothing,
Then your obedience must needs be as little: 120

If you can make shift here to taste your happiness,
Or pick out aught that likes you, much good do you;
You see your cheer, I'll make you no set dinner.

Isa. And, trust me, I may starve for all the good
I can find yet in this: sweet aunt, deal plainlier.

Liv. Say I should trust you now upon an oath,
And give you, in a secret, that would start you,
How am I sure of you in faith and silence?

Isa. Equal assurance may I find in mercy
As you for that in me!

Liv. It shall suffice:

130

Then know, however custom has made good,
For reputation's sake, the names of niece
And aunt 'twixt you and I, we're nothing less.

Isa. How's that?

Liv. I told you I should start your blood ;
You are no more allied to any of us,
Save what the courtesy of opinion casts)
Upon your mother's memory and your name,
Than the merest stranger is, or one begot
At Naples when the husband lies at Rome ;
There's so much odds betwixt us. Since your know-
ledge

140

Wish'd more instruction, and I have your oath
In pledge for silence, it makes me talk the freelier.
Did neyer the report of that fam'd Spaniard,
Marquis of Coria, since your time was ripe
For understanding, fill your ear with wonder?

Isa. Yes; what of him? I've heard his deeds of
honour

Often related when we liv'd in Naples.

Liv. You heard the praises of your father then.

Isa. My father!

Liv. That was he; but all the business
So carefully and so discreetly carried,
That fame receiv'd no spot by't, not a blemish ;
Your mother was so wary to her end,
None knew it but her conscience and her friend,

150

Till penitent confession made it mine,
 And now my pity yours, it had been long else ;
 And I hope care and love alike in you,
 Made good by oath, will see it take no wrong now.
 How weak his commands now whom you call father !
 How vain all his enforcements, your obedience !
 And what a largeness in' your will and liberty,
 To take, or to reject, or to do both !

For fools will serve to father wise men's children :

~~All this you've time to think on. O my wench,~~

~~Nothing o'erthrows our sex but indiscretion~~

We might do well else of a brittle people

As any under the great canopy :

I pray, forget not but to call me aunt still ;

Take heed of that ; it may be mark'd in time else :

But keep your thoughts to yourself, from all the world,

Kindred, or dearest friend ; nay, I entreat you,

170

From him that all this while you have call'd uncle ;

And though you love him dearly, as I know

His deserts claim as much even from a stranger,

Yet let not him know this, I prithee, do not ;

As ever thou hast hope of second pity,

If thou shouldst stand in need on't, do not do't.

Isa. Believe my oath, I will not.

Liv. Why, well said.—

Who shows more craft t' undo a maidenhead,

I'll resign my part to her.

[*Aside.*

Enter HIPPOLITO.

She's thine own ; go.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Isa. This marriage shall go forward.

Hip. With the Ward?

Are you in earnest?

Isa. 'Twould be ill for us else. ✓

Hip. For us! how means she that?

[*Aside.*

Isa. Troth, I begin

To be so well, methinks, within this hour,

For all this match able to kill one's heart,

210

Nothing can pull me down now; should my father

Provide a worse fool yet—which I should think

Were a hard thing to compass—I'd have him either;

The worse the better, none can come amiss now,

If he want wit enough; so discretion love me, ✓

Desert and judgment, I've content sufficient. ✓

She that comes once to be a housekeeper

Must not look every day to fare well, sir,

Like a young waiting-gentlewoman in service,

For she feeds commonly as her lady does,

220

No good bit passes her but she gets a taste on't;

But when she comes to keep house for herself,

She's glad of some choice cates then once a-week,

Or twice at most, and glad if she can get 'em;

So must affection learn to fare with thankfulness:

Pray, make your love no stranger, sir, that's all, — ✓

Though you be one yourself, and know not on't,

And I have sworn you must not.

[*Aside, and exit.*

Hip. This is beyond me! ✓

Never came joys so unexpectedly

To meet desires in man: how came she thus?

230

What has she done to her, can any tell?

'Tis beyond sorcery this, drugs, or love-powders ;
 Some art that has no name, sure ; strange to me
 Of all the wonders I e'er met withal
 Throughout my ten years' travels ; but I'm thankful for't.
 This marriage now must of necessity forward ;
 It is the only veil wit can devise
 To keep our acts hid from sin-piercing eyes. [Exit.]

SCENE II.

*Another Apartment in LIVIA'S House : a chess-board
 set out.*

Enter LIVIA and GUARDIANO.

Liv. How, sir ? a gentlewoman so young, so fair,
 As you set forth, spied from the widow's window ?

Guar. She.

Liv. Our Sunday-dinner woman ?

Guar. And Thursday-supper woman, the same still :
 I know not how she came by her, but I'll swear
 She's the prime gallant for a face in Florence,
 And no doubt other parts follow their leader.
 The Duke himself first spied her at the window,
 Then, in a rapture—as if admiration
 Were poor when it were single—beckon'd me,
 And pointed to the wonder warily,
 As one that fear'd she would draw in her splendour
 Too soon, if too much gaz'd at : I ne'er knew him
 So infinitely taken with a woman ;

Nor can I blame his appetite, or tax
 His raptures of slight folly ; she's a creature ✓
 Able to draw a state from serious business,
 And make it their best piece to do her service.
 What course shall we devise? has spoke twice now. 20

Liv. Twice?

Guar. 'Tis beyond your apprehension
 How strangely that one look has catch'd his heart : |
 'Twould prove but too much worth in wealth and favour
 To those should work his peace.

Liv. And if I do't not,
 Or at least come as near it—if your art
 Will take a little pains and second me—
 As any wench in Florence of my standing,
 I'll quite give o'er, and shut up shop in cunning. ✓

Guar. 'Tis for the Duke ; and if I fail your purpose, 30
 All means to come by riches or advancement
 Miss me, and skip me over !

Liv. Let the old woman then
 Be sent for with all speed, then I'll begin.

Guar. A good conclusion follow, and a sweet one,
 After this stale beginning with old ware !
 Within there !

Enter Servant.

Ser. Sir, do you call?

Guar. Come near, list hither. [*Whispers.*

Liv. I long myself to see this absolute creature,
 That wins the heart of love and praise so much.

Guar. Go, sir, make haste.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

To choose 'bove all the men she ever saw :
 My will goes not so fast as her consent now ;
 Her duty gets before my command still.

Guar. Why, then, sir, if you'll have me speak my
 thoughts,
 I smell 'twill be a match:

Fab. Ay, and a sweet young couple,
 If I have any judgment.

Guar. Faith, that's little.— [Aside. 60
 Let her be sent to-morrow, before noon,
 And handsomely trick'd up, for 'bout that time
 I mean to bring her in, and tender her to him.

Fab. I warrant you for handsome ; I will see
 Her things laid ready, every one in order,
 And have some part of her trick'd up to-night.

Guar. Why, well said.

Fab. 'Twas a use her mother had ;
 When she was invited to an early wedding,
 She'd dress her head o'er night, sponge up herself,
 And give her neck three lathers.

Guar. Ne'er a halter? [Aside. 70

Fab. On with her chain of pearl, her ruby bracelets,
 Lay ready all her tricks and jiggembobs.

Guar. So must your daughter.

Fab. I'll about it straight, sir. [Exit.

Liv. How he sweats in the foolish zeal of fatherhood, ↓
 After six ounces an hour, and seems
 To toil as much as if his cares were wise ones !

Guar. You've let his folly blood in the right vein,
 lady.

Liv. And here comes his sweet son-in-law that shall
be ;

They're both allied in wit before the marriage ;
What will they be hereafter, when they're nearer ! 80
Yet they can go no further than the fool ;
There's the world's end in both of 'em.

*Enter the Ward and SORDIDO, one with a shittlecock, the
other with a battledoor.*

Guar. Now, young heir.

Ward. What's the next business after shittlecock now ?

Guar. To-morrow you shall see the gentlewoman
Must be your wife.

Ward. There's even another thing too,
Must be kept up with a pair of battledoors :
My wife ! what can she do ?

Guar. Nay, that's a question you should ask yourself,
Ward,
When you're alone together.

Ward. That's as I list ; 90
A wife's to be ask['d] anywhere, I hope ;
I'll ask her in a congregation,
If I've a mind to't, and so save a license.
My guardianer has no more wit than an herb-woman,
That sells away all her sweet herbs and nosegays,
And keeps a stinking breath for her own pottage.

Sor. Let me be at the choosing of your belov'd,
If you desire a woman of good parts.

Ward. Thou shalt, sweet Sordido.

Sor. I have a plaguy guess ; let me alone to see what

she is: if I but look upon her—'way! I know all the faults to a hair that you may refuse her for. 102

Ward. Dost thou? I prithee, let me hear 'em,
Sordido.

Sor. Well, mark 'em then; I have 'em all in rhyme: †

The wife your guardianer ought to tender
Should be pretty, straight, and slender;
Her hair not short, her foot not long,
Her hand not huge, nor too, too loud her tongue;
No pearl in eye,¹ nor ruby in her nose,
No burn or cut but what the catalogue shows; 110
She must have teeth, and that no black ones,
And kiss most sweet when she does smack once;
Her skin must be both white and plump['d],
Her body straight, not 'hopper-rump'd,
Or wriggle sideways like a crab;
She must be neither slut nor drab,
Nor go too splay-foot with her shoes,
To make her smock lick up the dews;
And two things more, which I forgot to tell ye,
She neither must have bump in back nor belly: 120
These are the faults that will not make her pass.

Ward. And if I spy not these, I'm a rank ass.

Sor. Nay, more; by right, sir, you should see her
naked,

For that's the ancient order.

Ward. See her naked?

¹ See note 2, p. 142.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Faith, I must chide you, that you must be sent for ;
 You make yourself so strange, never come at us,
 And yet so near a neighbour, and so unkind ;
 Troth, you're to blame ; you cannot be more welcome
 To any house in Florence, that I'll tell you.

Moth. My thanks must needs acknowledge so much,
 madam.

Liv. How can you be so strange then ? I sit here
 Sometime whole days together without company, 150
 When business draws this gentleman from home,
 And should be happy in society
 Which I so well affect as that of yours :
 I know you're alone too ; why should not we,
 Like two kind neighbours, then, supply the wants
 Of one another, having tongue-discourse,
 Experience in the world, and such kind helps
 To laugh down time, and meet age merrily ? ¹

Moth. Age, madam ! you speak mirth ; 'tis at my door,
 But a long journey from your ladyship yet. 160

Liv. My faith, I'm nine-and-thirty, every stroke,
 wench ;
 And 'tis a general observation
 'Mongst knights—wives or widows we account ourselves
 Then old, when young men's eyes leave looking at's ;
 'Tis a true rule amongst us, and ne'er fail'd yet
 In any but in one, that I remember ;
 Indeed, she had a friend at nine-and-forty ;
 Marry, she paid well for' him, and in th' end

¹ Old ed. " meerly."

He kept a quean or two with her own money,
That robb'd her of her plate and cut her throat. 170

Moth. She had her punishment in this world, madam,
And a fair warning to all other women
That they live chaste at fifty.

Liv. Ay, or never, wench.
Come, now I have thy company, I'll not part with't
Tiil after supper.

Moth. Yes, I must crave pardon, madam.

Liv. I swear you shall stay supper ; we've no strangers,
woman,
None but my sojourners and I, this gentleman
And the young heir his ward ; you know our company.

Moth. Some other time I'll make bold with you,
madam.

Guar. Nay, pray stay, widow.

Liv. Faith, she shall not go : 180
Do you think I'll be forsworn ?

Moth. 'Tis a great while
Till supper-time ; I'll take my leave then now, madam,
And come again i' th' evening, since your ladyship
Will have it so.

Liv. I' th' evening? by my troth, wench,
I'll keep you while I have you : you've great business,
sure,

To sit alone at home ; I wonder strangely
What pleasure you take in't ; were't to me now,
I should be ever at one neighbour's house
Or other all day long : having no charge,
Or none to chide you, if you go or stay, 190

Who may live merrier, ay, or more at heart's ease?
Come, we'll to chess or draughts; there are an hundred
tricks

To drive out time till supper, never fear't, wench.

Moth. I'll but make one step home, and return straight,
madam.

Liv. Come, I'll not trust you; you use more excuses
To your kind friends than ever I knew any.
What business can you have, if you be sure
You've lock'd the doors? and, that being all you have,
I know you're careful on't. One afternoon
So much to spend here! say I should entreat you now 200
To lie a night or two, or a week, with me,
Or leave your own house for a month together;
It were a kindness that long neighbourhood
And friendship might well hope to prevail in;
Would you deny such a request? i'faith,
Speak truth, and freely.

Moth. I were then uncivil, madam.

Liv. Go to then; set your men; we'll have whole
nights

Of mirth together, ere we be much older, wench.

[LIVIA and Mother sit down to the chess-board.]

Moth. As good now tell her then, for she will know't;
I've always found her a most friendly lady. [*Aside.* 210

Liv. Why, widow, where's your mind?

Moth. Troth, even at home, madam:
To tell you truth, I left a gentlewoman
Even sitting all alone, which is uncomfortable,
Especially to young bloods.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Moth. It must be carried wondrous privately
From my son's knowledge, he'll break out in storms
else.—

Hark you, sir. [*Whispers the Servant, who then goes out.*]

Liv. [*to Guar.*] Now comes in the heat of your part.

Guar. True, I know't, lady; and if I be out,
May the Duke banish me from all employments,
Wanton or serious!

Liv. So, have you sent, widow?

Moth. Yes, madam, he's almost at home by this.

Liv. And, faith, let me entreat you that henceforward
All such unkind faults may be swept from friendship, 240
Which does but dim the lustre; and think thus much,
It is a wrong to me, that have ability
To bid friends welcome, when you keep 'em from me;
You cannot set greater dishonour near me;
For bounty is the credit and the glory
Of those that have enough. I see you're sorry,
And the good 'mends is made by't.

Re-enter Servant, showing in BIANCA.

Moth. Here she is, madam. [*Exit Servant.*]

Bian. I wonder how she comes to send for me now.

[*Aside.*]

Liv. Gentlewoman, you're most welcome; trust me,
you are,

observes:—"This is one of those scenes which has the air of being an immediate transcript from life. Livia, the 'good neighbour,' is as real a creature as one of Chaucer's characters. She is such another jolly Housewife as the Wife of Bath." ✓

As courtesy can make one, or respect
Due to the presence of you.

250

Bian. I give you thanks, lady.

Liv. I heard you were alone, and 't had appear'd
An ill condition¹ in me, though I knew you not,
Nor ever saw you—yet ~~humanity~~
Thinks every case her own—t' have kept your company
Here from you, and left you all solitary :
I rather ventur'd upon boldness then,
As the least fault, and wish'd your presence here ;
A thing most happily motion'd of that gentleman,
Whom I request you, for his care and pity,
To honour and reward with your acquaintance ;
A gentleman that ladies' rights stands for,
That's his profession.

260

Bian. 'Tis a noble one,
And honours my acquaintance.

Guar. All my intentions
Are servants to such mistresses.

Bian. 'Tis your modesty,
It seems, that makes your deserts speak so low, sir.

Liv. Come, widow.—Look you, lady, here's our
business ; [*Pointing to the chess-board.*]
Are we not well employ'd, think you? an old quarrel
Between us, that will ne'er be at an end.

Bian. No? and, methinks, there's men enough to part
you, lady.

270

Liv. Ho, but they set us on, let us come off

¹ Disposition.

As well as we can, poor souls ; men care no farther.
I pray, sit down, forsooth, if you've the patience
To look upon [two weak and tedious gamesters.]

Guar. Faith, madam, set these by till evening,
You'll have enough on't then ; the gentlewoman,
Being a stranger, would take more delight
To see your rooms and pictures.

Liv. Marry, good sir,
And well remember'd ; I beseech you, show 'em her,
That will beguile time well ; pray heartily, do, sir, 280
I'll do as much for you : here, take these keys ;
[Gives keys to GUARDIANO.]

Show her the monument too, and that's a thing
Every one sees not ; you can witness that, widow.

Moth. And that's worth sight indeed, madam.

Bian. Kind lady,
I fear I came to be a trouble to you.

Liv. O, nothing less, forsooth !

Bian. And to this courteous gentleman,
That wears a kindness in his breast so noble
And bounteous to the welcome of a stranger,

Guar. [If you but give acceptance to my service,]
You do the greatest grace and honour to me 290
That courtesy can merit.

Bian. I were to blame else,
~~And out of fashion much.~~ I pray you, lead, sir.

Liv. After a game or two, we're for you, gentlefolks.

Guar. We wish no better seconds in society
Than your discourses, madam, and your partner's
there.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Liv. Ay, but simplicity receives two for one.

Moth. What remedy but patience !

Enter GUARDIANO *and* BIANCA *above.*

Bian. Trust me, sir,

Mine eye ne'er met with fairer ornaments.

Guar. Nay, livelier, I'm persuaded, neither Florence
Nor Venice can produce.

Bian. Sir, my opinion
Takes your part highly.

Guar. There's a better piece
Yet than all these.

Bian. Not possible, sir !

Guar. Believe it, 320
You'll say so when you see't : turn but your eye now,
You're upon't presently.

[Draws¹ a curtain, and discovers the DUKE ; then
exit.

Bian. O sir !

Duke. He's gone, beauty :
Pish, look not after him ; he's but a vapour,
That, when the sun appears, ~~is seen no more.~~

Bian. O, treachery to honour !

Duke. Prithee, tremble not ;
I feel thy breast shake like a turtle panting
Under a loving hand that makes much on't :
Why art so fearful ? as I'm friend to brightness,

¹ The stage-direction in old ed. is " Duke above."

There's nothing but respect and honour near thee :
 You know me, you have seen me ; here's a heart 330
 Can witness I have seen thee.

Bian. The more's my danger.

Duke. The more's thy happiness. Pish, strive not,
 sweet ;

This strength were excellent employ'd in love now,
 But here ¹ 'tis spent amiss : strive not to seek
 Thy liberty, and keep me still in prison ;
 I'faith, you shall not out till I'm releas'd now ;
 We'll be both freed together, or stay still by't,
 So is captivity pleasant.

Bian. O my lord !

Duke. I am not here in vain ; have but the leisure
 To think on that, and thou'lt be soon resolv'd : 340
 The lifting of thy voice is but like one
 That does exalt his enemy, who, proving high,
 Lays all the plots to confound him that rais'd him.
 Take warning, I beseech thee ; thou seem'st to me
 [A creature so compos'd of gentleness,
 And delicate meekness—such as bless the faces
 Of figures that are drawn for goddesses,
 And makes art proud to look upon her work—]
 I should be sorry the least force should lay
 An unkind touch upon thee.

Bian. O my extremity ! 350
 My lord, what seek you ?

Duke. Love.

¹ Old ed. "here's."

Bian. 'Tis gone already ;
I have a husband.

Duke. That's a single comfort ;
Take a friend to him.

Bian. That's a double mischief,
Or else there's no religion.

Duke. Do not tremble
At fears of thine own making.

Bian. Nor, great lord,
Make me not bold with death and deeds of ruin,
Because they fear not you ; me they must fright ;
Then am I best in health : should thunder speak,
And none regard it, it had lost the name,
And were as good be still. I'm not like those 360
That take their soundest sleeps in greatest tempests ;
Then wake I most, the weather fearfullest,
And call for strength to virtue.

Duke. Sure, I think
Thou know'st the way to please me : I affect
A passionate pleading 'bove an easy yielding ;
But never pitied any,—they deserve none,—
That will not pity me. I can command,
Think upon that ; yet if thou truly knewest
The infinite pleasure my affection takes
In gentle, fair entreatings, when love's businesses 370
Are carried courteously 'twixt heart and heart,
You'd make more haste to please me.

Bian. Why should you seek, sir,
To take away that you can never give ?

Duke. But I give better in exchange,—wealth, honour ;

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Re-enter GUARDIANO.

Guar. I can but smile as often as I think on't:
 How prettily the poor fool was beguil'd | 400
 How unexpectedly! it's a witty age;
 Never were finer snares for women's honesties
 Than are devis'd in these days; no spider's web
 Made of a daintier thread than are now practis'd
 To catch love's flesh-fly by the silver wing:
 Yet, to prepare her stomach by degrees
 To Cupid's feast, because I saw 'twas queasy,
 I show'd her naked pictures by the way,
 A bit to stay the [appetite.] Well, advancement,
 I venture hard to find thee; if thou com'st | 410
 With a greater title set upon thy crest,
 I'll take that first cross patiently, and wait
 Until some other comes greater than that;
 I'll endure all. [*Aside.*

Liv. The game's even at the best now: you may see,
 widow,
 How all things draw to an end.

Moth. Even so do I, madam.

Liv. I pray, take some of your neighbours along with
 you.

Moth. They must be those are almost twice your
 years then,
 If they be chose fit matches for my time, madam.

Liv. Has not my duke bestirr'd himself?

Moth. Yes, faith, madam; | 420
 Has done me all the mischief in this game.

Liv. Has show'd himself in's kind.

Moth. In's kind, call you it?

I may swear that.

Liv. Yes, faith, and keep your oath.

Guar. Hark, list! there's somebody coming down:
'tis she. [*Aside.*

Re-enter BIANCA.

Bian. Now bless me from a blasting! I saw that
now,

Fearful for any woman's eye to look on;

Infectious mists and mildews hang at's eyes,

The weather of a doomsday dwells upon him:

Yet since mine honour's leprous, why¹ should I

Preserve that fair that caus'd the leprosy? 430

Come, poison all at once. [*Aside.*]—Thou in whose base-
ness

The bane of virtue broods, I'm bound in soul

Eternally to curse thy smooth-brow'd treachery,

That wore the fair veil of a friendly welcome,

And I a stranger; think upon't, 'tis worth it;

Murders pil'd up upon a guilty spirit,

At his last breath will not lie heavier

Than this betraying act upon thy conscience:

Beware of offering the first-fruits to sin;

His weight is deadly who commits with strumpets, 440

After they've been abas'd, and made for use;

¹ Old ed. "who."

If they offend to the death, as wise men know,
 How much more they, then, that first make 'em so!
 I give thee that to feed on. I'm made bold now,
 I thank thy treachery; sin and I'm acquainted,
 No couple greater; and I'm like that great one,
 Who, making politic use of a base villain,
He likes the treason well, but hates the traitor;
 So I hate thee, slave!

Guar. Well, so the Duke love me,
 I fare not much amiss then; two great feasts
 Do seldom come together in one day,
 We must not look for 'em.

Bian. What, at it still, mother?

Moth. You see we sit by't: are you so soon
 return'd?

Liv. So lively and so cheerful! a good sign that.

[*Aside.*

Moth. You have not seen all since, sure?

Bian. That have I, mother,
 The monument and all: I'm so beholding
 To this kind, honest, courteous gentleman,
 You'd little think it, mother; show'd me all,
 Had me from place to place so fashionably;
 The kindness of some people, how 't exceeds!
 Faith, I've seen that I little thought to see
 I' the morning when I rose.

Moth. Nay, so I told you
 Before you saw't, it would prove worth your sight.—
 I give you great thanks for my daughter, sir,
 And all your kindness towards her.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

ACT III.

SCENE I.

A Room in the House of LEANTIO'S Mother.

Enter Mother.

Moth. I would my son would either keep at home,
 Or I were in my grave !
 She was but one day abroad, but ever since
 She's grown so cutted,¹ there's no speaking to her :
 Whether the sight of great cheer at my lady's,
 And such mean fare at home, work discontent in her,
 I know not ; but I'm sure she's strangely alter'd,
 I'll ne'er keep daughter-in-law i' th' house with me
 Again, if I had an hundred : when read I of any
 That agreed long together, but she and her mother 10
 Fell out in the first quarter ? nay, 'sometime
 A grudging or ² a scolding the first week, byrlady !
 So takes the new ³ disease, methinks, in my house :

¹ Querulous.

² Old ed. " of."

³ The *new disease* was the name of a malady that made its appearance in the latter half of the sixteenth century. Its symptoms are described in *Every Man in his Humour*, ii. 1 : see Gifford's *Jonson*, 1875, l. 48.

I'm weary of my part ; there's nothing likes her ;
 I know not how to please her here a' late :
 And here she comes.

Enter BIANCA.

Bian. This is the strangest house
 For all defects as ever gentlewoman
 Made shift withal to pass away her love in :
 Why is there not a cushion-cloth of drawn-work,
 Or some fair cut-work pinn'd up in my bed-chamber, 20
 A silver and gilt casting-bottle¹ hung by't?—
 Nay, since I am content to be so kind to you,
 To spare you for a silver basin and ewer,
 Which one of my fashion looks for of duty ;
 She's never offer'd under where she sleeps.

Moth. She talks of things here my whole state's not
 worth.

Bian. Never a green silk quilt is there i' th' house,
 mother,
 To cast upon my bed?

Moth. No, by troth, is there,
 Nor orange-tawny neither.

Bian. Here's a house
 ✓ For a young gentlewoman to be got with child in ! 30

Moth. Yes, simple though you make it, there has been
 three
 Got in a year in't, since you move me to't,

¹ A bottle for sprinkling perfumes.

And all as sweet-fac'd children and as lovely
 As you'll be mother of: I will not spare you:
 What, cannot children be begot, think you,
 Without gilt casting-bottles? yes, and as sweet ones:
 The miller's daughter brings forth as white¹ boys
 As she that bathes herself with milk and bean-flour!²
 'Tis an old saying, One may keep good cheer
 In a mean house; so may true love affect
 After the rate of princes in a cottage. 40

Bian. Troth, you speak wondrous well for your old
 house here;

'Twill shortly fall down at your feet to thank you,
 Or stoop, when you go to bed, like a good child,
 To ask you blessing. Must I live in want
 Because my fortune match'd me with your son?
 Wives do not give away themselves to husbands
 To the end to be quite cast away; they look
 To be the better us'd and tender'd rather,
 Highlier respected, and maintain'd the richer; 50
 They're well rewarded else for the free gift
 Of their whole life to a husband! I ask less now
 Than what I had at home when I was a maid,
 And at my father's house; kept short of that
 Which a wife knows she must have, nay, and will—
Will, mother, if she be not a fool born;
 And report went of me, that I could wrangle
 For what I wanted when I was two hours old:

¹ *White boy* was a term of endearment for a favourite son.

² Cf. *The Old Law*, ii. 2, l. 12 (vol. ii. p. 157).

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

The treasures of the deep are not so precious
 As are the conceal'd comforts of a man
Lock'd up in woman's love. I scent the air
 Of blessings when I come but near the house:
 What a delicious breath marriage sends forth!
 The violet-bed's not sweeter. Honest wedlock
 Is like a banqueting-house built in a garden,
 On which the spring's chaste flowers take delight
 To cast their modest odours; when base lust,
 With all her powders, paintings, and best pride,
 Is but a fair house built by a ditch-side.
 When I behold a glorious dangerous strumpet,
Sparkling in beauty and destruction too,
 Both at a twinkling, I do liken straight
 Her beautified body to a goodly temple
 That's built on vaults where carcasses lie rotting;
 And so, by little and little, I shrink back again,
 And quench desire with a cool meditation;
 And I'm as well, methinks. Now for a welcome
 Able to draw men's envies upon man;
 A kiss now, that will hang upon my lip
 As sweet as morning-dew upon a rose,
 And full as long; after a five-days' fast
 She'll be so greedy now, and cling about me,
 I take care how I shall be rid of her:
 And here't begins.

Re-enter BIANCA and Mother.

Bian. O sir, you're welcome home!

Moth. O, is he come? I'm glad on't.

Lean. Is that all?

110

Why, this is ¹ dreadful now as sudden death
To some rich man, that flatters all his sins
With promise of repentance when he's old,
And dies in the midway before he comes to't.— [*Aside.*
Sure you're not well, Bianca ; how dost, prithee?

Bian. I have been better than I am at this time.

Lean. Alas, I thought so !

Bian. Nay, I've been worse too
Than now you see me, sir.

Lean. I'm glad thou mend'st yet,
I feel my heart mend too : how came it to thee?
Has anything dislik'd thee in my absence?

120

Bian. No, certain ; I have had the best content
That Florence can afford.

Lean. Thou mak'st the best on't.—
Speak, mother ; what's the cause? you must needs
know.

Moth. Troth, I know none, son ; let her speak herself ;
[Unless it be the same gave Lucifer
A tumbling cast,—that's pride.]

Bian. Methinks this house stands nothing to my
mind ;

I'd have some pleasant lodging i' th' high street, sir ;
Or if 'twere near the court, sir, that were much better :
'Tis a sweet recreation for a gentlewoman

130

~ To stand in a bay-window and see gallants.

Lean. Now I've another temper, a mere stranger

To that of yours, it seems ; I should delight
To see none but yourself.

Bian. I praise not that ;
Too fond is as unseemly as too churlish :
I would not have a husband of that proneness
To kiss me before company for a world ;
Beside, 'tis tedious to see one thing still, sir,
Be it the best that ever heart affected ;
Nay, were't yourself, whose love had power, you
know,

140

To bring me from my friends, I'd not stand thus
And gaze upon you always, troth, I could not, sir ;
As good be blind and have no use of sight,
As look on one thing still : ~~what's the eye's treasure~~
~~But change of objects? you are learned,~~ sir,
And know I speak not ill : 'tis¹ full as virtuous
For woman's eye to look on several men,
As for her heart, sir, to be fix'd on one.

Lean. Now thou com'st home to me ; a kiss for that
word.

Bian. No matter for a kiss, sir ; let it pass ; 150
'Tis but a toy, we'll not so much as mind it ;
Let's talk of other business, and forget it.
What news now of the pirates? any stirring?
Prithee, discourse a little.

Moth. I'm glad he's here yet,
To see her tricks himself ; I had lied monstrously
If I had told 'em first. [Aside.

¹ Old ed. "'till."

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Mess. A young gentlewoman I was sent to.

Lean. A young gentlewoman? 180

Mess. Ay, sir, ~~about~~ why look you wildly, sir?

Lean. At your strange error; you've mistook the house,
sir?

There's none such here, I assure you.

Mess. I assure you too

The man that sent me cannot be mistook.

Lean. Why, who is't sent you, sir?

Mess. The Duke.

Lean. The Duke?

Mess. Yes; he entreats her company at a banquet
At lady Livia's house.

Lean. Troth, shall I tell you, sir,

It is the most erroneous business

That e'er your honest pains was abus'd with;

I pray, forgive me if I smile a little,

190

I cannot choose, i'faith, sir, at an error

So comical as this,—I mean no harm though:

His grace has been most wondrous ill inform'd:

Pray, so return it, sir. What should her name be?

Mess. That I shall tell you straight too—Bianca
Capello.¹

Lean. How, sir? Bianca? what do you call th' other?

Mess. Capello. Sir, it seems you know no such then?

Lean. Who should this be? I never heard o' the name.

Mess. Then 'tis a sure mistake.

Lean. What if you inquir'd

¹ Old ed. "Brancha Capella:" see note, p. 306.

In the next street, sir? I saw gallants there
 In the new houses that are built of late;
 Ten to one there you find her.

200

Mess. Nay, no matter;
 I will return the mistake, and seek no further.

Lean. Use your own will and pleasure, sir, you're
welcome. [*Exit Messenger.*
~~What shall I think of first?~~—Come forth, Bianca!

Re-enter BIANCA.

Thou art betray'd, I fear me.

Bian. Betray'd! how, sir?

Lean. The Duke knows thee.

Bian. Knows me! how know you that, sir?

Lean. Has got thy name. †

Bian. Ay, and my good name too,
 That's worse o' the twain.

[*Aside.*]

Lean. How comes this work about?

Bian. How should the Duke know me? can you guess,
 mother?

210

Moth. Not I, with all my wits; sure we kept house
 close.

Lean. Kept close! not all the locks in Italy
 Can keep you women so; you have been gadding,
 And ventur'd out at twilight to the court-green yonder,
 And met the gallant bowlers coming home;
 Without your masks too, both of you, I'll be hang'd
 else:

Thou hast been seen, Bianca, by some stranger;
 Never excuse it.

Bian. I'll not seek the way, sir ;
Do you think you've married me to mew me up,
Not to be seen? what would you make of me? . 220 - r

Lean. A good wife, nothing else.

Bian. Why, so are some
That are seen every day, else the devil take 'em.

Lean. No more, then ; I believe all virtuous in
thee,

Without an argument ; 'twas but thy hard chance
To be seen somewhere, there lies all the mischief :
But I've devis'd a riddance.

Moth. Now I can tell you, son,
The time and place.

Lean. When? where?

Moth. What wits have I !
When you last took your leave, if you remember,
You left us both at window.

Lean. Right, I know that.

Moth. And not the third part of an hour after, 230
The Duke pass'd by, in a great solemnity,
To St. Mark's temple, and, to my apprehension,
He look'd up twice to the window.

Lean. O, there quicken'd
The mischief of this hour !

Bian. If you call't mischief,
It is a thing I fear I am conceiv'd with. [Aside.

Lean. Look'd he up twice, and could you take no
warning?

Moth. Why, once may do as much harm, son, as a
thousand ;

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Bian. No? I shall prove unmannerly,
Rude, and uncivil, mad, and imitate you!—
Come, mother, come, follow his humour no longer;
We shall be all executed for treason shortly.

Moth. Not I, i'faith; I'll first obey the Duke,
And taste of a good banquet I'm of thy mind:
I'll step but up and fetch two handkerchiefs
To pocket up some sweetmeats, and o'ertake thee.

[*Exit.*

Bian. Why, here's an old wench would trot into a
bawd now
For some dry sucket,¹ or a colt in march-pane.² 270

[*Aside, and exit.*

Lean. O thou, the ripe time of man's misery,
wedlock,
When all his thoughts, like overladen trees,
Crack with the fruits they bear, in cares, in jealousies!
O, that's a fruit that ripens hastily,
After 'tis knit to marriage! it begins,
As soon as the sun shines upon the bride,
A little to show colour. Blessed powers,
Whence comes this alteration? the distractions,
'The fears and doubts it brings, are numberless;
And yet the cause I know not. What a peace 280
Has he that never marries! if he knew
The benefit he enjoy'd, or had the fortune
To come and speak with me, he should know then

¹ Sweetmeat.

² See note 2, vol. v. p. 377.

Th' infinite wealth he had, and discern rightly
 The greatness of his treasure by my loss :
 Nay, what a quietness has he 'bove mine
 That wears his youth out in a strumpet's arms,
 And never spends more care upon a woman
 Than at the time of lust ; but walks away ;
 And if he find her dead at his return, 290
 His pity is soon done,—he breaks a sigh
 In many parts, and gives her but a piece on't :
 But all the fears, shames, jealousies, costs and troubles,
 And still renew'd cares of a marriage-bed,
 Live in the issue, when the wife is dead.

Re-enter Messenger.

Mess. A good perfection to your thoughts !

Lean. The news, sir ?

Mess. Though you were pleas'd of late to pin an error
 on me,

You must not shift another in your stead too :
 The Duke has sent me for you.

Lean. How ! for me, sir ?—

I see then 'tis my theft ; we're both betray'd : 300
 Well, I'm not the first has stol'n away a maid ;
 My countrymen have us'd it. [*Aside.*]—I'll along with
 you, sir. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.

An Apartment in LIVIA'S House: a Banquet set out.

Enter GUARDIANO and the Ward.

Guar. Take you especial note of such a gentle-
woman,

She's here on purpose ; I've invited her,
Her father, and her uncle, to this banquet ;
Mark her behaviour well, it does concern you ;
And what her good parts are, as far as time
And place can modestly require a knowledge of,
Shall be laid open to your understanding.
You know I'm both your guardian and your uncle ;
My care of you is double, ward and nephew,
And I'll express it here.

Ward. Faith, I should know her
Now by her mark among a thousand women ;
A little pretty drest and tidy thing, you say ?

10

Guar. Right.

Ward. With a lusty sprouting sprig in her hair ?

Guar. Thou goest the right way still ; take one mark
more,—

Thou shalt ne'er find her hand out of her uncle's, ✓
Or else his out of hers, if she be near him ;
The love of kindred never yet stuck closer
Than theirs to one another ; he that weds her,
Marries her uncle's heart too.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

What will it prove anon, when 'tis stuff'd full
Of wine and sweetmeats, being so impudent fasting?

[*Aside.*

Duke. We've heard of your good parts, sir, which we
honour

With our embrace and love.—Is not the captainship
Of Rouans' ¹ citadel, since the late deceas'd,
Suppli[ed] by any yet?

Gentleman. By none, my lord.

40

Duke. Take it, the place is yours then; and as faith-
fulness

And desert grows, our favour shall grow with 't:

[*LEANTIO kneels.*

Rise now, the captain of our fort at Rouans.

Lean. [*rising.*] The service of whole life give your
grace thanks!

Duke. Come, sit, Bianca.

[*DUKE, BIANCA, &c., seat themselves.*

Lean. This is some good yet,
And more than e'er I look'd for; a fine bit
To stay a cuckold's stomach: all preferment
That springs from sin and lust it shoots up quickly,
As gardeners' crops do in the rotten'st grounds;
So is all means rais'd from base prostitution
Even like a salad growing upon a dunghill. 50
I'm like a thing that never was yet heard of,
Half merry and half mad; much like a fellow
That eats his meat with a good appetite,

¹ "A misprint, I presume; but qy. for what?"—*Dyce.*

And wears a plague-sore that would fright a country ;
 Or rather like the barren, harden'd ass,
 That feeds on thistles till he bleeds again ;
 And such is the condition of my misery. [Aside.]

Liv. Is that your son, widow ?

Moth. Yes ; did your ladyship
 Never know that till now ?

Liv. No, trust me, did I,—

60

Nor ever truly felt the power of love
 ✓ And pity to a man, till now I knew him.
 I have enough to buy me my desires,
 And yet to spare, that's one good comfort. [Aside.]—

Hark you,

Pray, let me speak with you, sir, before you go.

Lean. With me, lady ? you shall, I'm at your
service.—

What will she say now, trow ?¹ more goodness yet ?

[Aside.]

Ward. I see her now, I'm sure ; the ape's so little,
 I shall scarce feel her ; I have seen almost
 As tall as she sold in the fair for tenpence :.
 See how she simpers it, as if marmalade
 Would not melt in her mouth ! she might have the
kindness, i'faith,

70

To send me a gilded bull from her own trencher,

A ram, a goat, or somewhat to be nibbling :

✓ These women, when they come to [sweet] things
 once,

¹ *i.e.* think you ?

They forget all their friends, they grow so greedy,
Nay, oftentimes their husbands.

Duke. Here's a health now, gallants,
To the best beauty at this day in Florence.

Bian. Whoe'er she be, she shall not go unpledg'd,
sir.

Duke. Nay, you're excus'd for this.

Bian. Who, I, my lord?

Duke. Yes, by the law of Bacchus; } plead your benefit, So
You are not bound to pledge your own health, lady.

Bian. That's a good way, my lord, to keep me dry.

Duke. Nay, then, I'll not offend Venus so much,
Let Bacchus seek his 'mends in another court;
Here's to thyself, Bianca. [DUKE and others drink.

Bian. Nothing comes
More welcome to that name than your grace.

Lean. So, so;
Here stands the poor thief now that stole the treasure,
And he's not thought on. Ours is near kin now
To a twin-misery born into the world; 90
First the hard-conscienc'd worldling, he hoards wealth
up,

Then comes the next, and he feasts all upon't;
One's damn'd for getting, th' other for spending on't. ✓
O equal justice, thou hast met my sin
With a full weight! I'm rightly now opprest,
All her friends' heavy hearts lie in my breast. [Aside.

Duke. Methinks there is no spirit 'mongst us, gallants,
But what divinely sparkles from the eyes
Of bright Bianca; we sat all in darkness

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

But for that splendour, Who was't told us lately 100
Of a match-making right, a marriage-tender?

Guar. 'Twas I, my lord.

Duke. 'Twas you indeed. Where is she?

Guar. This is the gentlewoman.

Fab. My lord, my daughter.

Duke. Why, here's some stirring yet.

Fab. She's a dear child to me.

Duke. That must needs be, you say she is your
daughter.

Fab. Nay, my good lord, dear to my purse, I mean,
Beside my person, I ne'er reckon'd that.
Sh'as the full qualities of a gentlewoman ;
I've brought her up to music, dancing, what not,
That may commend her sex, and stir her husband. 110

Duke. And which is he now?

Guar. This young heir, my lord.

Duke. What is he brought up to?

Hip. To cat and trap. [Aside.]

Guar. My lord, he's a great ward, wealthy, but simple ;
His parts consist in acres.

Duke. O, wise-acres.

Guar. You've spoke him in a word, sir.

Bian. 'Las, poor gentlewoman !

She's ill-bestead, unless sh'as dealt the wiselier,
And laid in more provision for her youth ;
Fools will not keep in summer.

✓ *Lean,* No, nor such wives
From whores in winter.

[Aside.]


Duke. Yea, the voice too, sir?


Fab. Ay, and a sweet breast¹ too, my lord, I hope, 120
 Or I have cast away my money wisely ;
 She took her prick-song² earlier, my lord,
 Than any of her kindred ever did ;
 A rare child, though I say't : but I'd not have
 The baggage hear so much, 'twould make her swell
 straight,

And maids of all things must not be puff'd up.

Duke. Let's turn us to a better banquet then ;
 For music bids the soul of³ man to a feast,
 And that's indeed a noble entertainment,
 Worthy Bianca's self: you shall perceive, beauty, 130
 Our Florentine damsels are not brought up idly.

Bian. They're wiser of themselves it seems, my lord,
 And can take gifts when goodness offers 'em.

Lean. True, and damnation has taught you that
wisdom ; [Music. 
You can take gifts too. 'O' that music mocks me !
 [Aside.

Liv. I am as dumb to any language now
 But love's, as one that never learn'd to speak.
 I am not yet so old but he may think of me ; ✓ 140
 My own fault, I've been idle a long time ;
 But I'll begin the week, and paint to-morrow,  140

¹ Voice.

² "Harmony written or pricked down, in opposition to plain-song, where the descant rested with the will of the singer."—Chappell's *Popular Music*, i. 51.

³ Old ed. "of a."

So follow my true labour day by day ;
I never thriv'd so well as when I us'd it.

[*Aside.*]

Isa. [*sings.*]

*What harder chance can fall to woman,
Who was born to cleave to some man,
Than to bestow her time, youth, beauty,
Life's observance, honour, duty,
On a thing for no use good
But to make physic work, or blood
Force fresh in an old lady's cheek ?
She that would be
Mother of fools, let her compound with me.*

150

Ward. Here's a tune indeed ! pish,
I had rather hear one ballad sung i' the nose now
Of the lamentable drowning of fat sheep and oxen,
Than all these simpering tunes play'd upon cat's-guts,
And sung by little kitlings. [*Aside.*]

Fab. How like you her breast now, my lord ?

Bian. Her breast ?

He talks as if his daughter had given suck
✓ Before she were married, as her betters have ;
The next he praises sure will be her nipples. [*Aside.* 160]

Duke. Methinks now such a voice to such a husband
Is like a jewel of unvalu'd¹ worth
Hung at a fool's ear. [*Aside* to BIANCA.]

Fab. May it please your grace
To give her leave to show another quality ?

¹ Invaluable.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Ward. Ay, all that, uncle, shall not fool me out :
Pish, I stick closer to myself than so.

Guar. I must entreat you, sir, to take your niece
And dance with her ; my Ward's a little **[wilful]**
He'd have you show him the way.

Hip. Me, sir? he shall 190
Command it at all hours ; pray, tell him so.

Guar. I thank you for him ; he has not wit himself,
sir.

Hip. Come, my life's peace—I've a strange offic on't
here :

'Tis some man's luck to keep the joys he likes
Conceal'd for his own bosom, but my fortune
To set 'em out now for another's liking ;
Like the mad misery of necessitous man,
That parts from his good horse with many praises,
And goes on foot himself : need must be obey'd
In every action ; it mars man and maid. [*Aside.* 200

[*Music.* HIPPOLITO and ISABELLA dance, making
*obcissance to the DUKE, and to each other, both
before and after the dance.*

Duke. Signor Fabricio, you're a happy father ;
Your cares and pains are fortunate you see,
Your cost bears noble fruits.—Hippolito, thanks.

Fab. Here's some amends for all my charges yet ;
She wins both **[prick and praise]** where'er she comes.

Duke. How lik'st, Bianca?

Bian. All things well, my lord,

¹ " Prick and praise."—See note 3, vol. iii. p. 36.

But this poor gentlewoman's fortune, that's the
worst.

Duke. There is no doubt, Bianca, she'll find leisure
To make that good enough ; he's rich and simple.

Bian. She has the better hope o' th' upper hand,
indeed,

210

Which women strive for most.

Guar. Do't when I bid you, sir.

Ward. I'll venture ~~but a hornpipe~~ with her, guardianer,
Or some such married man's dance.

Guar. Well, venture something, sir.

Ward. I have rhyme for what I do.

Guar. But little reason, I think.

Ward. Plain men dance the measures,¹ the sin-
quapace² the gay ;
Cuckolds dance the hornpipe, and farmers dance the
hay ;³
Your soldiers dance the round,⁴ and maidens that grow
big ;
You[r] drunkards, the canaries ;⁵ you[r] whore and bawd,
the jig.

Here's your eight kind of dancers ; he that finds
The ninth let him pay the minstrels.

220

¹ A grave, stately dance.

² *Cinq-pace* (or *galliard*), a lively French dance. Dyce seems to take the word "gay" as the name of a dance ; but "the gay" are surely contrasted with "plain men," the meaning being—"Staid people dance the solemn measures, gay people prefer the lively galliard."

³ A rustic dance.

⁴ See note 3. vol. iii. p. 99.

⁵ A quick and lively dance.

Duke. O, here he appears once in his own person ;
I thought he would have married her by attorney,
And lain with her so too.

Bian. Nay, my kind lord,
There's very seldom any found so foolish
To give away his part there.

Lean. Bitter scoff !
Yet I must do't ! with what a cruel pride
The glory of her sin strikes by my afflictions ! [Aside.

[*The Ward and ISABELLA dance ; he ridiculously
imitating HIPPOLITO.*

Duke. This thing will, make shift, sirs, to make a
husband,
For aught I see in him.—How think'st, Bianca ?

Bian. Faith, an ill-favour'd shift, my lord, me-
thinks ;

230

If he would take some voyage when he's married,
Dangerous, or long enough, and scarce be seen
Once in nine year together, a wife then
Might make indifferent shift to be content with him.

Duke. A kiss [*kisses her*] ; that wit deserves to be
made much on.—

Come, our caroch !

Guar. Stands ready for your grace.

Duke. My thanks to all your loves.—Come, fair
Bianca,

We have took special care of you, and provided
Your lodging near us now.

Bian. Your love is great, my lord.

Duke. Once more, our thanks to all.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Liv. This makes me madder to enjoy him now.

[*Aside.*

Lean. Canst thou forget all this, and better joys
That we met after this, which then new kisses
Took pride to praise?

[*Aside.*

Liv. I shall grow madder yet. [*Aside.*—Sir—

Lean. This cannot be but of some close bawd's
working.—

[*Aside.*

Cry mercy, lady! what would you say to me?

My sorrow makes me so unmannerly,

So comfort bless me, I had quite forgot you.

270

Liv. Nothing, but even, in pity to that passion,¹
Would give your grief good counsel.

Lean. Marry, and welcome, lady;
It never could come better.

Liv. Then first, sir,
To make away all your good thoughts at once of her,
~~Know most assuredly she is a stumpet.~~

Lean. Ha! *most assuredly!* speak not a thing
So vild² so certainly, leave it more doubtful.

Liv. Then I must leave all truth, and spare my
knowledge

A sin which I too lately found and wept for.

Lean. Found you it?

Liv. Ay, with wet eyes.

Lean. O perjurious friendship!

280

Liv. You miss'd your fortunes when you met with her,
sir,

¹ Sorrow.

² Vile.

Young gentlemen that only love for beauty, ✓ 1 1-4
 They love not wisely ; such a marriage rather
 Proves the destruction of affection ;
 It brings on want, and want 's the key of whoredom.
 I think y'had small means with her?

Lean. O, not any, lady.

Liv. Alas, poor gentleman ! what meant'st thou, sir,
 Quite to undo thyself with thine own kind heart ?
 Thou art too good and pitiful to woman ;
 Marry, sir, thank thy stars for this blest fortune, 290
 That rids the summer of thy youth so well
 From many beggars, that had lain a-sunning
 In thy beams only else, till thou hadst wasted
 The whole days of thy life in heat and labour.
 What would you say now to a creature found
 As pitiful to you, and, as it were,
 Even sent on purpose from the whole sex general, ✓
 To requite all that kindness you have shown to't ?

Lean. What's that, madam ?

Liv. Nay, a gentlewoman, and one able
 To reward good things, ay, and bears a [conscience]
 to't : 300

Couldst thou love such a one, that, blow all fortunes,
 Would never see thee want ?

Nay, more, maintain thee to thine enemy's envy,
 And shalt not spend a care for't, stir a thought,
 Nor break a sleep ? unless love's music wak'd thee,
 No storm of fortune should : look upon me,
 And know that woman.

Lean. O my life's wealth, Bianca !

Liv. Still with her name? will nothing wear it out?

[*Aside.*

That deep sigh went but for a strumpet, sir.

Lean. It can go for no other that loves me. 310

Liv. He's vex'd in mind: I came too soon to him;
✓ Where's my discretion now, my skill, my judgment?

I'm cunning in all arts but my own love.

'Tis as unseasonable to tempt him now

So soon, as [for] a widow to be courted

Following her husband's corse, or to make bargain

By the grave-side, and take a young man there:

Her strange departure stands like a hearse¹ yet

Before his eyes, which time will take down shortly.

[*Aside, and exit.*

X *Lean.* Is she my wife till death, yet no more mine? 320

That's a hard measure: then what's marriage good for?

Methinks, by right I should not now be living,

And then 'twere all well. What a happiness

Had I been made of, had I never seen her!

For nothing makes man's loss grievous to him¹

But knowledge of the worth of what he loses;

For what he never had, he never misses.

She's gone for ever, utterly; there is

As much redemption of a soul from hell,

As a fair woman's body from his palace. 330

Why should my love last longer than her truth?

¹ "' In imitation of which [cenotaph] our *hearses* here in England are set up in churches, during the continuance of a year, or the space of certaine monthes.' Weever—cited in Todd's Johnson's *Dict. v. Hearse.*"
—Dyce.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Youth knows no greater loss. I pray, let's walk, sir ;
 You never saw the beauty of my house yet,
 Nor how abundantly fortune has blest me
 In worldly treasure ; trust me, I've enough, sir, 360
 To make my friend a rich man in my life,
 A great man at my death ; yourself will say so.
 If you want anything, and spare to speak,
 Troth, I'll condemn you for a wilful man, sir.

Lean. Why, sure,

This can be but the flattery of some dream.

Liv. Now, by this kiss, my love, my soul, and riches,
 'Tis all true substance ! [~~Kisses him~~]

Come, you shall see my wealth ; take what you list ;
 The gallanter you go, the more you please me : 370
 I will allow you too your page and footman,
 Your race-horses, or any various pleasure
 Exercis'd youth delights in ; but to me
 Only, sir, wear your heart of constant stuff ;
 Do but you love enough, I'll give enough.

Lean. Troth, then, I'll love enough, and take enough.

Liv. Then we are both pleas'd enough. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.

A Room in FABRICIO'S House.

Enter on one side GUARDIANO and ISABELLA, on the other the Ward and SORDIDO.

Guar. Now, nephew, here's the gentlewoman again.

Ward. Mass, here she's come again! mark her now, Sordido.

Guar. This is the maid my love and care has chose
Out for your wife, and so I tender her to you ;
Yourself has been eye-witness of some qualities
That speak a courtly breeding, and are costly :
I bring you both to talk together now ;
'Tis time you grew familiar in your tongues,
To-morrow you join hands, and one ring ties you,
And one bed holds you ; if you like the choice, 10
Her father and her friends are i' the next room,
And stay to see the contract ere they part :
Therefore, despatch, good Ward, be sweet and short ;
Like her, or like her not, there's but two ways,
And one your body, th' other your purse pays.

Ward. I warrant you, guardianer, I'll not stand all
day thrumming,
But quickly shoot my bolt at your next coming.

Guar. Well said : good fortune to your birding then !
[*Exit.*

Ward. I never miss'd mark yet.

Sor. Troth, I think, master, if the truth were known,

You never shot at any but the kitchen wench, 21
 And that was a she-woodcock,¹ a mere innocent,²
 That was oft lost and cried³ at eight-and-twenty.

Ward. No more of that meat, Sordido, here's eggs o'
 the spit now ;

We must turn gingerly : draw out the catalogue
 Of ~~all the faults of women.~~

Sor. How? all the faults? have you so little reason
 to think so much paper will lie in my breeches ; why,
 ten carts will not carry it, if you set down but the bawds.
 All the faults? pray, let's be content with a few of 'em ;
 and if they were less, you would find 'em enough, I
 warrant you : look you, sir. 32

Isa. But that I have th' advantage of the fool,
 As much as woman's heart can wish and joy at,
 What an infernal torment 'twere to be
Thus bought and sold, and turn'd and pry'd into,
 When, alas,
 The worst bit's too good for him ! and the comfort is,
 Has but a cater's⁴ place on't, and provides
 All for another's table : yet how curious 40
 The ass is ! like some nice professor on't,
 That buys up all the daintiest food i' the markets,
 And seldom licks his lips after a [taste] on't. [*Aside.*]

Sor. Now to her, now you've scann'd all her parts over.

Ward. But at [which] end shall I begin now, Sor-
 dido ?

¹ Simpleton.

² *i.e.* by the public crier.

³ Fool.

⁴ Caterer's.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Sor. They cannot stand better than in her head, I think: where would you have them? and for her nose, 'tis of a very good last.

Ward. I have known as good as that has not lasted a year though.

Sor. That's in the using of a thing; will not any strong bridge fall down in time, if we do nothing but beat at the bottom? a nose of buff would not last always, sir, especially if it came into the camp once. 81

Ward. But, Sordido, how shall we do to make her laugh, that I may see what teeth she has? for I'll not bate her a tooth, nor take a black one into the bargain.

Sor. Why, do but you fall in talk with her, you cannot choose but, one time or other, make her laugh, sir.

Ward. It shall go hard but I will. — Pray, what qualities have you beside singing and dancing? can you play at shittlecock, forsooth?

Isa. Ay, and at stool-ball¹ too, sir; I've great luck at it. 90

Ward. Why, can you catch a ball well?

Isa. I have catch'd two in my lap at one game.

Ward. What! have you, woman? I must have you learn

To play at trap too, then you're full and whole.

Isa. Anything that you please to bring me up to, I shall take pains to practise.

¹ An old game at ball, usually played by women. Strutt gives a description of it. Herrick has a pretty copy of verses challenging Lucia to play with him at stool-ball "for sugar-cakes and wine."

Ward. 'Twill not do, Sordido ;

We shall ne'er get her mouth open'd wide enough.

Sor. No, sir? that's strange : then here's a trick for your learning.

[~~SORDIDO~~ yawns, ISABELLA yawns also, but covers her mouth with a handkerchief.

Look now, look now ! quick, quick there !

Ward. Pox of that scurvy mannerly trick with handkerchief !

100

It hinder'd me a little, but I'm satisfied :

When a fair woman gapes, and stops her mouth so,

It shows like a cloth-stopple in a cream-pot :

I have fair hope of her teeth now, Sordido.

Sor. Why, then, you've all well, sir ; for aught I see,
She's right and straight enough now as she stands ;
They'll commonly lie crooked, that's no matter ;
Wise gamesters

Never find fault with that, let 'em lie still so.

109

Ward. I'd fain mark how she goes, and then I have all ; for of all creatures I cannot abide a splay-footed woman ; she's an unlucky thing to meet in a morning ; her heels keep together so, as if she were beginning an Irish dance still, and [t]he wriggling of her bum playing the tune to't : but I have bethought a cleanly shift to find it ; dab down as you see me, and peep of one side when her back's toward you—I'll show you the way.

Sor. And you shall find me apt enough to peeping ; I have been one of them has seen mad sights Under your scaffolds.

Ward. Will't please you walk, forsooth,

120

A turn or two by yourself? you're so pleasing to me,
I take delight to view you on both sides.

Isa. I shall be glad to fetch a walk to your love, sir ;
'Twill get affection a [good stomach] sir,—
Which I had need have to fall to such coarse [victuals.]
[*Aside.*

[*ISABELLA walks while the Ward and SORDIDO
stoop down to look at her.*

Ward. Now go thy ways for a clean-treading wench,
As ever man in modesty peep'd under !

Sor. I see the sweetest sight to please my master !
Never went Frenchman righter upon ropes,
Than she on Florentine rushes.

Ward. 'Tis enough, forsooth.

130

Isa. And how do you like me now, sir ?

Ward. Faith, so well,
I never mean to part with thee, sweetheart,
Under some sixteen children, and all boys.

Isa. You'll be at simple pains, if you prove kind,
And breed 'em all in your [teeth.¹]

Ward. Nay, by my faith,
What serves your [belly] for? 'twould make my cheeks
Look like blown bagpipes.

Re-enter GUARDIANO.

Guar. How now, ward and nephew,
Gentlewoman and niece I speak, is it so or not ?

¹ " In allusion to a superstitious idea, that an affectionate husband had the toothache while his wife was breeding.—" Editor of 1816.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

ACT. IV.

SCENE I.

BIANCA'S *Lodging at Court.*

Enter BIANCA, *attended by two Ladies.*

Bian. How goes your watches, ladies? what's a'clock now?

First L. By mine, full nine.

Sec. L. By mine, a quarter past.

First L. I set mine by St. Mark's.

Sec. L. St. Anthony's, they say,
Goes truer.

First L. That's but your opinion, madam,
Because you love a gentleman o' the name.

Sec. L. He's a true gentleman then.

First L. So may he be
That comes to me to-night, for aught you know.

Bian. I'll end this strife straight: I set mine by the
sun;
I love to set by the best, one shall not then
Be troubled to set often.

Sec. L. You do wisely in't.

Bian. If I should set my watch, as some girls do,
By every clock i' the town, 'twould ne'er go true ;
And too much turning of the dial's point,
Or tampering with the spring, might in small time
Spoil the whole work too ; here it wants of nine now.

First L. It does indeed, forsooth ; mine's nearest truth
yet.

Sec. L. Yet I've found her lying with an advocate,
which show'd
Like two false clocks together in one parish.

Bian. So now I thank you, ladies ; I desire
Awhile to be alone.

First L. And I am nobody, 20
Methinks, unless I've one or other with me.—
Faith, my desire and hers will ne'er be sisters.

[*Aside.*—*Exeunt Ladies.*

Bian. How strangely woman's fortune comes about !
This was the farthest way to come to me,
All would have judg'd that knew me born in Venice, X
And there with many jealous eyes brought up,
That never thought they had me sure enough
But when they were upon me ; yet my hap
To meet it here, so far off from my birth-place,
My friends, or kindred ! 'tis not good, in sadness,¹ 30
To keep a maid so strict in her young days ;
Restraint
Breeds wandering thoughts, as many fasting days
-A great desire to see flesh stirring again :

¹ " In sadness " = seriously.

I'll ne'er use any girl of mine so strictly ;
 Howe'er they're kept, their fortunes find 'em out ;
 I see't in me : if they be got in court,
 I'll ne'er forbid 'em the country ; nor the court,
 Though they be born i' the country : they will come to't,
 And fetch their falls a thousand mile about, 40
 Where one would little think on't.

Enter LEANTIO, richly dressed.

Lean. I long to see how my despiser looks
 Now she's come here to court : these are her lodgings ;
 She's simply now advanc'd : I took her out
 Of no such window, I remember, first ;
 That was a great deal lower, and less carv'd. [*Aside.*]

Bian. How now ! what silkworm's this, i' the name of
pride ?
 What, is it he ?

Lean. A bow i' th' ham to your greatness ;
 You must have now three legs¹ I take it, must you not ?

Bian. Then I must take another, I shall want else 50
 The service I should have ; you have but two there.

Lean. You're richly plac'd.

Bian. Methinks you're wondrous brave,² sir.

Lean. A sumptuous lodging.

Bian. You've an excellent suit there.

Lean. A chair of velvet.

Bian. Is your cloak lin'd through, sir ?

¹ Three bows.

² Finely dressed.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

She dote, and send, and give, and all to him !

Why, here's a bawd plagu'd home ! [*Aside.*]—You're
simply happy, sir ;

Yet I'll not envy you.

Lean. No, court-saint, not thou !

You keep some friend of a new fashion :

~~There's no harm in your~~ devil, he's a suckling, 80

But he will breed teeth shortly, will he not ?

Bian. Take heed you play not then too long with him.

Lean. Yes, and the great one too : I shall find time

To play a hot religious bout with some of you,

And, perhaps, drive you and your course of sins

To their eternal kennels. I speak softly now,

'Tis manners in a noble woman's lodgings,

And I well know¹ all my degrees of duty ;

But come I to your everlasting parting once,

Thunder shall seem soft music to that tempest. 90

Bian. 'Twas said last week there would be change of
weather,

When the moon hung so, and belike you heard it.

Lean. Why, here's sin made, and ne'er a conscience
put to't,—

A monster with all forehead and no eyes !

Why do I talk to thee of sense or virtue,

That art as dark as death ? and as much madness

To set light before thee, as to lead blind folks

To see the monuments, which they may smell as soon

As they behold,—marry, ofttimes their heads,

¹ Old ed. "knew."

For want of light, may feel the hardness of 'em ; 100
 So shall thy blind pride my revenge and anger,
 That canst not see it now ; and it may fall
 At such an hour when thou least seest of all :
 So, to an ignorance darker than thy womb
 I leave thy perjurd soul ; a plague will come ! ✓ [Exit.

Bian. Get you gone first, and then I fear no greater ;
 Nor thee will I fear long ; I'll have this sauciness
 Soon banish'd from these lodgings, and the rooms
Perfum'd well after the corrupt air it leaves :
 His breath has made me almost sick, in troth ; 110
 A poor, base start-up ! life, because has got
 Fair clothes by foul means, comes to rail and show 'em !

Enter the DUKE.

Duke. Who's that ?

Bian. Cry you mercy, sir !

Duke. Prithee, who's tha ?

Bian. The former thing, my lord, to whom you
 gave

The captainship ; he eats his [meat] with grudging still.

Duke. Still ?

Bian. He comes vaunting here of his new love,
 And the new clothes she gave him, lady Livia ;
 Who but she now his mistress !

Duke. Lady Livia ?

Be sure of what you say.

Bian. He show'd me her name, sir,
 In perfum'd paper, her vows, her letter,

With an intent to spite me ; so his heart said,
 And his threats made it good ; they were as spiteful
 As ever malice utter'd, and as dangerous,
 Should his hand follow the copy.

Duke. But that must not :

Do not you vex your mind ; prithee, to bed, go ;
 All shall be well and quiet.

Bian. I love peace, sir.

Duke. And so do all that love ; take you no care for't,
 It shall be still provided to your hand.—

[*Exit* BIANCA.]

Who's near us there ?

Enter Servant.

Ser. My lord ?

Duke. Seek out Hippolito,
 Brother to lady Livia, with all speed.

130

Ser. He was the last man I saw, my lord.

Duke. Make haste.— [*Exit* Servant.]

He is a blood soon stirr'd ; and as he's quick

To apprehend a wrong, he's bold and sudden

In bringing forth a ruin : I know, likewise,

The reputation of his sister's honour's

As dear to him as life-blood to his heart ;

Beside, I'll flatter him with a goodness to her,—

—Which I now thought on, but ne'er meant to practise,

Because I know her base,—and that wind drives him :

{ The ulcerous reputation feels the poise

140

{ Of lightest wrongs, as sores are vex'd with flies.

He comes.—

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Duke. He ne'er made so brave a voyage,
By his own talk.

Hip. The poor old widow's son.
I humbly take my leave.

Duke. I see 'tis done.— [*Aside.*
Give her good counsel, make her see her error ;
I know she'll hearken to you.

Hip. Yes, my lord,
I make no doubt, as I shall ~~take the course~~
~~Which she shall never know till it be acted,~~ 170
And when she wakes to honour, then she'll thank me
for't :

I'll imitate the pities of old surgeons
To this lost limb, who, ere they show their art,
Cast one asleep, then cut the diseas'd part ;
So, out of love to her I pity most,
She shall not feel him going till he's lost ;
Then she'll commend the cure. [*Exit.*

Duke. The great cure's ¹ past ;
I count this done already ; his wrath's sure,
And speaks an injury deep : farewell, Leantio,
This place will never hear thee murmur more.— 180

Enter the Cardinal and Servants.

Our noble brother, welcome !

Car. Set those lights down :
Depart till you be call'd. [*Exit* Servants.]

¹ "Qy. 'care's'?"—*Dyce.* But *cure* and *care* were used indiscriminately (as *Dyce* elsewhere notes : see his *Beaumont and Fletcher*, xi. 56).

Duke. There's serious business
 Fix'd in his look ; nay, it inclines a little
 To the dark colour of a discontentment.— [Aside.
 Brother, what is't commands your eye so powerfully?
 Speak, you seem lost.

Car. The thing I look on seems so,
 To my eyes lost for ever.

Duke. You look on me.

Car. What a grief 'tis to a religious feeling.
 To think a man should have a friend so 'goodly,
 So wise, so noble, nay, a duke, a brother,
 And all this certainly damn'd !

190

Duke. How :

Car. 'Tis no wonder,
 If your great sin can do't : dare you look up
 For thinking of a vengeance ? dare you sleep
 For fear of never waking but to death ?
 And dedicate unto a strumpet's love
 The strength of your affections, zeal, and health ?
 Here you stand now, can you assure your pleasures
 You shall once more enjoy her, but once more ?
 Alas, you cannot ! what a misery 'tis then,
 To be more certain of eternal death
 Than of a next embrace ! nay, shall I show you
 How more unfortunate you stand in sin
 Than the low,¹ private man : all his offences,
 Like enclos'd grounds, keep but about himself,
 And seldom stretch beyond his own soul's bounds ;

200

¹ Old ed. "love."

And when a man grows miserable, 'tis some comfort
 When he's no further charg'd than with himself,
 'Tis a sweet ease to wretchedness: but, ~~great man,~~

~~Every sin thou committ'st shows~~ like a flame

Upon a mountain, 'tis seen far about,

210

And, with a big wind made of popular breath,

The sparkles fly through cities, here one takes,

Another catches there, and in short time

Waste all to cinders; but remember still,

~~What burnt the valleys first, came~~ from the hill:

Every offence draws his particular pain,

But 'tis example proves the great man's bane.

The sins of mean men lie like scatter'd parcels

Of an unperfect bill; but when such fall,

Then comes example, and that sums up all:

220

And this your reason grants; if ~~men~~ of good lives,

Who by their virtuous actions stir up others

To noble and ~~religious~~ imitation,

Receive the greater glory after death,

As sin must needs confess, what may they feel

In height of torments and in weight of vengeance,

Not only they themselves not doing well,

But sets a light up to show men to hell?

Duke. If you have done, I have; ~~no more, sweet~~
 brother!

229

Car. I ~~know time spent~~ in goodness is too tedious;

This had not been a moment's space in lust now:

How dare you venture on eternal pain,

That cannot bear a minute's reprehension?

Methinks you should endure to hear that talk'd of

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

The powers of darkness groan, makes all hell sorry :
 First I praise heaven, then in my work I glory.
 Who's there attends without ?

Re-enter Servants.

First Ser. My lord ?

Car. Take up those lights ; there was a thicker dark-
ness

When they came first.—The peace of a fair soul
 Keep with my noble brother !

Duke. Joys be with you, sir !

[~~Exit~~ Cardinal and Servants.]

She lies alone to-night for't, and must still,
 Though it be hard to conquer ; but I've vow'd
 Never to know her as a strumpet more, 270
 And I must save my oath : if fury fail not,
 Her husband dies to-night, or, at the most,
 Lives not to see the morning spent to-morrow ;
 Then will I make her lawfully mine own,
 Without this sin and horror. Now I'm chidden,
 For what I shall enjoy then unforbidden ;
 And I'll not freeze in stoves : 'tis but a while ;
 Live like a hopeful bridegroom, chaste from flesh,
 And pleasure then will seem new, fair, and fresh.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE II.*A Hall in LIVIA'S House.**Enter HIPPOLITO.*

Hip. The morning so far wasted, yet his baseness
 So impudent! see if the very sun
 Do not blush at him!
 Dare he do thus much, and know me alive?
 Put case one must be vicious, as I know myself
 Monstrously guilty, there's a blind time made for't,
 He might use only that, — 'twere conscionable;
Art, silence, closeness, subtlety, and darkness,
Are fit for such a business; but there's no pity
To be bestow'd on an apparent sinner,
An impudent daylight lecher. The great zeal
 I bear to her advancement in this match
 With lord Vincentio, as the Duke has ^{thought} _wrought it,
 To the perpetual honour of our house,
 Puts fire into my blood to purge the air
 Of this corruption, fear it spread too far,
 And poison the whole hopes of this fair fortune.
 I love her good so dearly, that no brother
 Shall venture farther for a sister's glory
 Than I for her preferment.

*Enter LEANTIO and a Page.**Lean.* Once again

I'll see that glistening ~~whore, shines like a serpent~~
 Now the court sun's upon her. [*Aside.*—Page.

Page. Anon, sir.

Lean. I'll go in state too. [*Aside.*—See the coach
 be ready. [*Exit Page.*

I'll hurry away presently.

Hip. Yes, you shall hurry,
 And the devil after you : take that at setting forth :
 [~~Strikes him.~~

Now, and you'll draw, we're upon equal terms, sir.
 Thou took'st advantage of my name in honour
 Upon my sister ; I ne'er saw the stroke
 Come, till I found my reputation bleeding ;
 And therefore count it I no sin to valour 30
 To serve thy lust so : now we're of even hand,
 Take your best course against me. You must die.

Lean. ~~How close sticks envy to man's happiness !~~
 When I was poor, and little car'd for life,
 I had no such means offer'd me to die,
 No man's wrath minded me.—Slave, I turn this to thee,
 [~~Draws.~~

To call thee to account for a wound lately
 Of a base stamp upon me.

Hip. 'Twas most fit
 For a base metal : come and fetch one now
 More noble than, for I will use thee fairer 40
 Than thou hast done thine [own] soul, or our honour ;
 [*They fight.*
 And there I think 'tis for thee. [*LEANTIO falls.*

[*Voices within.*] Help, help ! O, part 'em !

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Hip. Will you but entertain a noble patience
Till you but hear the reason, worthy sister?

Liv. The reason! ~~that's a jest hell falls a laughing at:~~
Is there a reason found for the destruction
Of our more lawful loves, and ~~was there none~~
To kill the black lust ~~'twixt thy niece and thee,~~
That has kept close so long?

Guar. How's that, good madam?

Liv. Too true, sir; there she stands, let her deny't:
The deed cries shortly in the midwife's arms, 70
Unless the parents' sins strike it still-born;
And if you be not deaf and ignorant,
You'll hear strange notes ere long.—Look upon me,
wench;

'Twas I betray'd thy honour subtly to him,
Under a false tale; it lights upon me now.—
His arm has paid me home upon thy breast,
My sweet, belov'd Leantio!

Guar. Was my judgment
And care in choice so devilishly abus'd,
So beyond shamefully? all the world will grin at me.

Ward. O Sordido, Sordido, I'm damn'd, I'm damn'd!

Sor. Damn'd? why, sir? 81

Ward. One of the wicked; dost not see't? a cuckold,
a plain reprobate cuckold!

Sor. Nay, and you be damned for that, be of good
cheer, sir, you've gallant company of all professions;
I'll have a wife next Sunday too, because I'll along with
you myself.

Ward. That will be some comfort yet.

Liv. You, sir, that bear your load of injuries,
As I of sorrows, lend me your griev'd strength 90
To this sad burden [*pointing to the body of LEANTIO*],
who in life wore actions,

Flames were not nimbler: we will talk of things
May have the luck to break our hearts together.

Guar. I'll list to nothing but revenge and anger,
Whose counsels I will follow. H

[*Exeunt LIVIA and GUARDIANO, with the body of
LEANTIO.*]

Sor. A wife, quoth 'a?
Here's a sweet plum-tree of your guardianer's grafting!

Ward. Nay, there's a worse name belongs to this fruit
yet, and you could hit on't, a more open one; for he
that marries a whore looks like a fellow bound all his
lifetime to a medlar-tree and that's good stuff; 'tis no
sooner ripe but it looks rotten, and so do some queans
at nineteen. A pox on't! I thought there was some
knavery a-broach, for something stirred in her belly the
first night I lay with her. 104

Sor. What, what, sir?

Ward. This is she brought up so courtly, can sing,
and dance!—and tumble too, methinks: I'll never marry
wife again that has so many qualities.

Sor. Indeed, they are seldom good, master; for likely
when they are taught so many, they will have one trick
more of their own finding out. Well, give me a wench
but with one good quality, to lie with none but her
husband, and that's bringing up enough for any woman
breathing.

Ward. This was the fault when she was tendered to me ; you never looked to this.

Sor. Alas, how would you have me see through a great farthingale, sir? I cannot peep through a millstone, or in the going, to see what's done i' the bottom.

Ward. Her father praised her breast ;¹ sh'ad the voice, forsooth ! I marvelled she sung so small indeed, being no maid : now I perceive there's a young quirister in her belly, this breeds a singing in my head, I'm sure.

Sor. 'Tis but the tune of your wife's *sinquapace*² danced in a feather-bed : faith, go lie down, master ; but take heed your horns do not make holes in the pillow-beers.³—I would not batter brows with him for a hogs-head of angels ; he would prick my skull as full of holes as a scrivener's sand-box.

129

[*Aside.*—*Exeunt Ward and SORDIDO.*

Isa. Was ever maid so cruelly beguil'd,
'To the confusion of life, soul, and honour,
All of one woman's murdering ! I'd fain bring
Her name no nearer to my blood than woman,
And 'tis too much of that. O, shame and horror !
In that ~~small distance from~~ you man to me
Lies sin enough to ~~make a~~ whole world perish.—

[*Aside.*

'Tis time we parted, sir, and left the sight

¹ Voice.

² Cinquapace (or galliard),—a lively French dance.

³ Pillow-cases. It is an old word ; Chaucer uses it in the Prologue to *The Canterbury Tales*, l. 694 :—

“ For in his male he hadde a *pillow-beer*.”

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Things worth the fire it holds, without the fear
 Of danger or of law ; for mischiefs acted
 Under the privilege of a marriage-triumph,
 At the Duke's hasty nuptials, will be thought
 Things merely accidental, all's ¹ by chance,
 Not got of their own natures.

Liv. I conceive you, sir,
 Even to a longing for performance on't ;
 And here behold some ~~fruits~~ — [~~Kneels to~~ HIPPOLITO and
 ISABELLA.] ~~Forgive me both :~~

What I am now, return'd to sense and judgment, 170
 Is not the same rage and distraction
 Presented lately to you, — that rude form
 Is gone for ever ; I am now myself,
 That speaks all peace and friendship, and these tears
 Are the true springs of hearty, penitent sorrow
 For those foul wrongs which my forgetful fury
 Slander'd your virtues with : this gentleman
 Is well resolv'd ² now.

Guar. I was never otherways ;
 I knew, alas, 'twas but your anger spake it,
 And I ne'er thought on't more.

Hip. [*raising LIVIA.*] Pray, rise, good sister. 180

Isa. Here's even as sweet amends made for a wrong
 now,
 As one that gives a wound, and pays the surgeon ;
 All the smart's nothing, the great loss of blood,

¹ A contraction for "all as."

² Satisfied.

Or time of hindrance : well, I had a mother,
I can dissemble too. [*Aside.*]
—What wrongs have slipt
Through anger's ignorance, aunt, my heart forgives.

Guar. Why, thus! tuneful now!

Hip. And what I did, sister,
Was all for honour's cause, which time to come
Will approve to you.

Liv. Being awak'd to goodness,
I understand so much, sir, and praise now 190
The fortune of your arm and of your safety ;
For by his death you've rid me of a sin
As costly as e'er woman doated on :
'T has pleas'd the Duke so well too, that, behold, sir,
[*Giving paper.*

Has sent you here your pardon, which I kiss'd
With most affectionate comfort : when 'twas brought,
Then 'was my fit just past ; it came so well, methought,
To glad my heart.

Hip. I see his grace thinks on me.

Liv. There's no talk now but of the preparation
For the great marriage.

Hip. Does he marry her, then? 200

Liv. With all speed, suddenly, as fast as cost
Can be laid on with many thousand hands.
This gentleman and I had once a purpose
To have honour'd the first marriage of the Duke
With an invention of his own ; 'twas ready,
The pains well past, most of the charge bestow'd on't,

1 Perhaps we should read with the editor of 1816 "that's."

Then came the death of your good mother, niece,
And turn'd the glory of it all to black :

'Tis a device would fit these times so well too,

Art's treasury not better : if you'll join, 210

It shall be done ; the cost shall all be mine.

Hip. You've my voice first ; 'twill well approve my
thankfulness

For the Duke's love and favour.

Liv. What say you, niece ?

Isa. I am content to make one.

Guar. The plot's full then ;

Your pages, madam, will make shift for Cupids.

Liv. That will they, sir.

Guar. You'll play your old part still.

Liv. What is it ? good troth, I have even forgot it.

Guar. Why, Juno-Pronuba, the marriage-goddess.

Liv. 'Tis right indeed.

Guar. And you shall play the Nymph,
That offers sacrifice to appease her wrath. 220

Isa. Sacrifice, good sir ?

Liv. Must I be appeas'd then ?

Guar. That's as you list yourself, as you see cause.

Liv. Methinks 'twould show the more state in her
deity

To be incens'd.

Isa. 'Twould ; but my sacrifice

Shall take a course to appease you ;—or I'll fail in't,
And teach a sinful bawd to play a goddess.

[*Aside, and exit.*]

Guar. For our parts, we'll not be ambitious, sir :

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

To knit your honours and your life fast to her?
 Is not sin sure enough to wretched man,
 But he must bind himself in chains to't I worse;
~~Must marriage, that immaculate robe of honour,~~
 That renders virtue glorious, fair, and fruitful
 To her great master, be now made the garment
 Of leprosy and foulness? ~~Is this penitence~~
 To sanctify hot lust? what is it otherwise
 Than worship done to devils? Is this the best
 Amends that sin can make after her riots? 20
 As if a drunkard, to appease heaven's wrath,
 Should offer up his surfeit for a sacrifice:
 If that be comely, then lust's offerings are
 On wedlock's sacred altar.

Duke. Here you're bitter
 Without cause, brother; what I vow'd I keep,
 As safe as you your conscience; and this needs not;
 I taste more wrath in't than I do religion,
 And envy more than goodness: the path now
 I tread is honest, leads to lawful love,
 Which virtue in her strictness would not check: 30
 I vow'd no more to keep a sensual woman;
 'Tis done, I mean to make a lawful wife of her.

Car. He that taught you that craft,
 Call him not master long, he will undo you;
 Grow not too cunning for your soul, good brother:
 Is it enough to use adulterous thefts,
 And then take sanctuary in marriage?
 I grant, so long as an offender keeps
Close in a privileg'd temple, his life's safe;

But if he ever venture to come out, 40
 And so be taken, then he surely dies for't :
 So now you're safe ; but when you leave this body,
 Man's only privileg'd temple upon earth,
 In which the guilty soul takes sanctuary,
 Then you'll perceive what wrongs chaste vows endure
 When lust usurps the bed that should be pure.

Bian. Sir, I have read you over all this while
 In silence, and I find great knowledge in you
 And severe learning ; yet, ~~'mongst all your virtues~~
 I see not charity ~~written~~, which some call 50
 The first-born of religion, and I wonder
 I cannot see't in yours : believe it, sir,
 There is no virtue can be sooner miss'd,
 Or later welcom'd ; it begins the rest,
 And sets 'em all in order : ¹ heaven and angels
 Take great delight in a converted sinner ;
 Why should you then, a servant and professor,
 Differ so much from them ? If every woman
 That commits evil should be therefore kept
 Back in desires of goodness, how should virtue 60
 Be known and honour'd ? From a man that's blind,
 To take a burning taper 'tis no wrong,
 He never misses it ; but to take light
 From one that sees, that's injury and spite.
 Pray, whether is religion better serv'd,
 When lives that are licentious are made honest,

¹ " Brancha [Bianca] here evidently alludes to the 13th chapter of St. Paul's First Epistle to the Corinthians."—Editor of 1816.

Than when they still run through a sinful blood?
 'Tis nothing virtue's temples to deface;
 But build the ruins, there's a work of grace!

Duke. I kiss thee for that spirit; thou'st prais'd thy
 wit

70

A modest way.—On, on, there!

[*Hautboys. Exeunt all except the Cardinal.*

Car. Lust is bold,
 And will have vengeance speak ere't be controll'd.

[*Exit.*

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

But when thou hear'st me give a stamp, down with't,
The villain's caught then.

Ward. If I miss you, hang me: I love to catch a villain, and your stamp¹ shall go current I warrant you. But how shall I rise up and let him down too all at one hole? that will be a horrible puzzle. You know I have a part in't, I play Slander.

Guar. True, but never make you ready for't.

Ward. No? my clothes are bought and all, and a foul fiend's head, with a long, contumelious tongue i' the chaps on't, a very fit shape for Slander i' th' out-parishes. 22

Guar. It shall not come so far; thou understand'st it not.

Ward. O, O!

Guar. He shall lie deep enough ere that time, And stick first upon those.

Ward. Now I conceive you, guardianer.

Guar. Away!

List to the privy stamp, that's all thy part.

Ward. Stamp my horns in a mortar, if I miss you, and give the powder in white wine to sick cuckolds, a very present remedy for the headache. [Exit. 30

Guar. If this should any way miscarry now—
As, if the fool be nimble enough, 'tis certain—
The pages, that present the swift-wing'd Cupids,
Are taught to hit him with their shafts of love,
Fitting his part, which I have cunningly poison'd:

¹ See note, vol. v. p. 151.

He ~~cannot~~ 'scape my fury; and those ills
 Will be laid all on fortune, not our [wills];
 That's all the sport on't: for who will imagine
 That, at the celebration of this night,
 Any mischance that haps can flow from spite? [*Exit.* 40

Flourish. Enter above DUKE, BIANCA, Lord Cardinal,
 FABRICIO, other Cardinals, and Lords and Ladies in
 state.

Duke. Now, our fair duchess, your delight shall wit-
 ness
 How you're belov'd and honour'd; all the glories
 Bestow'd upon the gladness of this night
 Are done for your bright sake.

Bian. I am the more
 In debt, my lord, to love and courtesies
 That offer up themselves so bounteously
 To do me honour'd grace, without my merit.

Duke. A goodness set in greatness; how it [sparkles]
 Afar off, like pure [diamonds] set in gold!
 How perfect my desires were, might I witness 50
 But a fair noble peace 'twixt your two spirits!
 The reconcilment would be more sweet to me
 Than longer life to him that fears to die.—
 Good sir—

Car. I profess peace, and am content.

Duke. I'll see the seal upon't, and then 'tis firm.

Car. You shall have all you wish. [*Kisses* BIANCA.

Duke. I've all indeed now.

Bian. But I've made surer work ; this shall not blind
me ;

He that begins so early to reprove,
Quickly rid him, or look for little love :
Beware a brother's envy ; he's next heir too. 60
Cardinal, you die this night ; the plot's laid surely ;
In time of sports death may steal in securely,
Then 'tis least thought on ;
For he that's most religious, holy friend,
Does not at all hours think upon his end ;
He has his times of frailty, and his thoughts
Their transportations too through flesh and blood,
For all his zeal, his learning, and his light,
As well as we, poor soul, that sin by night. [Aside.

Duke [looking at a paper.] What's this, Fabricio ?

Fab. Marry, my lord, the model 70
Of what's presented.

Duke. O, we thank their loves.—

Sweet duchess, take your seat ; list to the argument.

[Reads.

There is a Nymph that haunts the woods and springs,

In love with two at once, and they with her ;

Equal it runs ; but, to decide these things,

The cause to mighty Juno they refer,

She being the marriage-goddess : the two lovers

They offer sighs, the Nymph a sacrifice,

All to please Juno, who by signs discovers

How the event shall be ; so that strife dies : 80

Then springs a second ; for the man refus'd

Grows discontent, and, out of love abus'd,

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

*Take heed of stumbling more, look to your way;
Remember still the Via Lactea.*

100

[GANYMEDE and HEBE respectively offer their cups
to the DUKE and Cardinal, who drink.

*Hebe. Well, Ganymede, you've more faults, though not
so known;*

I spill'd one cup, but you've filch'd many a one.

*Hym. No more; forbear for Hymen's sake:
In love we met, and so let's part.¹*

[*Exeunt* HYMEN, GANYMEDE, and HEBE.

*Duke. But, soft; here's no such persons in the argu-
ment*

*As these three, Hymen, Hebe, Ganymede;
The actors that this model here discovers
Are only four,—Juno, a Nymph, two lovers.*

*Bian. This is some antimasque² belike, my
lord,*

*To entertain time.—Now my peace is perfect, 110
Let sports come on apace. [*Aside.*]
—Now is there time,
my lord: [*Music.**

Hark you! you hear from 'em.

Duke. The Nymph indeed!

*Enter two Nymphs, bearing tapers lighted; then ISABELLA
as a Nymph, dressed with flowers and garlands,
carrying a censer with fire in it: they set the censer*

¹ By reading "leave take" for let's part," we should procure a rhyme.

² A ridiculous interlude introduced during the masque. See Bacon's essay on Masques.

and tapers on JUNO'S altar with much reverence,
singing this ditty in parts :

*Juno, nuptial goddess,
Thou that rul'st o'er coupled bodies,
Tiest man to woman, never to forsake her,
Thou only powerful marriage-maker,
Pity this amaz'd affection !
I love both, and both love me ;
Nor know I where to give rejection,
My heart likes so equally, 120
Till thou sett'st right my peace of life,
-And with thy power conclude this strife.*

*Isa. Now, with my thanks, depart you to the springs,
I to these wells of love. [Exeunt the two Nymphs.]—*

*Thou sacred goddess
And queen of nuptials, daughter to great Saturn,
Sister and wife to Jove, imperial Juno,
Pity this passionate conflict in my breast,
This tedious war 'twixt two affections ;
Crown me with victory, and my heart's at peace !*

Enter HIPPOLITO and GUARDIANO as Shepherds.

Hip. Make me that happy man, thou mighty goddess !

*Guar. But I live most in hope, if truest love
Merit the greatest comfort. 131*

*Isa. I love both
With such an even and fair affection,
I know not which to speak for, which to wish for, |*

*Till thou, great arbitress 'twixt lovers' hearts,
By thy auspicious grace design the man ;
Which pity I implore !*

*Hip. } We all implore it !
Guar. }*

*Isa. And after sighs—contrition's truest odours—
I offer to thy powerful deity
This precious incense [waving the censer] ; may it ascend
peacefully !—*

140

*And if it keep true touch, my good aunt Juno,
'Twill try your immortality ere't be long :
I fear you'll ne'er get so nigh heaven again,
When you're once down.*

[*Aside.*]

[*LIVIA descends as JUNO, attended by Pages as
Cupids.*]

*Liv. Though you and your affections
Seem all as dark to our illustrious brightness
As night's inheritance, hell, we pity you,
And your requests are granted. You ask signs,
They shall be given you ; we'll be gracious to you :
He of those twain which we determine for you,
Love's arrows shall wound twice ; the latter wound
Betokens love in age ; for so are all
Whose love continues firmly all their lifetime
Twice wounded at their marriage, else affection
Dies when youth ends.—This savour overcomes me !*

150

[*Aside.*]

*Now, for a sign of wealth and golden days,
Bright-ey'd prosperity—which all couples love,*

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Hip. Nay, then, I kiss thy cold lips, and applaud
This thy revenge in death. [*Kisses the body of ISABELLA.*]

Fab. Look, Juno's down too!

[*Cupids shoot at HIPOLITO.*]

What makes she there? her pride should keep aloft:
She was wont to scorn the earth in other shows;
Methinks her peacocks' feathers are much pull'd.

Hip. O, death runs through my blood, in a wild
flame too! 180

Plague of those Cupids! some lay hold on 'em,
Let 'em not scape; they've spoil'd me, the shaft's deadly.

Duke. I've lost myself in this quite.

Hip. My great lords,
We're all confounded.

Duke. How?

Hip. Dead; and I worse.

Fab. Dead! my girl dead? I hope
My sister Juno has not serv'd me so.

Hip. Lust and forgetfulness has been amongst us,
And we are brought to nothing: some blest charity
Lend me the speeding pity of his sword,
To quench this fire in blood! Leantio's death 190
Has brought all this upon us—now I taste it—
And made us lay plots to confound each other;
Th' event so proves it; and men's understanding
Is riper at his fall than all his lifetime.

She, in a madness for her lover's death,
Reveal'd a fearful lust in our near bloods,
For which I'm punish'd dreadfully and unlook'd for;
Prov'd her own ruin too; vengeance met vengeance,

Like a set match, as if the plague[s] of sin
 Had been agreed to meet here altogether : 200
 But how her sawning partner fell I reach not,
 Unless caught by some springe of his own setting,—
 For, on my pain, he never dream'd of dying ;
 The plot was all his own, and he had cunning
 Enough to save himself : but 'tis the property
 Of guilty deeds to draw your wise men downward :
 Therefore the wonder ceases. O, this torment !
Duke. Our guard below there !

Enter a Lord with a Guard.

Lord. My lord ?

Hip. Run and meet death then,
 And cut off time and pain ! [*Runs on a sword and dies.*]

Lord. Behold, my lord,
 Has run his breast upon a weapon's point ! 210

Duke. Upon the first night of our nuptial honours
 Destruction play her triumph, and great mischiefs
Mask in expected pleasures ! 'tis prodigious !
 They're things most fearfully ominous ; I like 'em not.—
 Remove these ruin'd bodies from our eyes.

[*The Guard removes the bodies of ISABELLA,
 LIVIA, and HIPPOLITO.*]

Bian. Not yet, no change ? when falls he to the
 earth ? [*Aside.*]

Lord. Please but your excellence to peruse that paper,
 [*Giving paper to the DUKE.*]

Which is a brief confession from the heart.

Of him that fell first, ere his soul departed ;
 And there the darkness of these deeds speaks
 plainly, 220

'Tis the full scope, the manner, and intent :
 His ward, that ignorantly let him down,
 Fear put to present flight at the voice of him.

Bian. Not yet ? [*Aside.*

Duke. ~~Read, read, for I am lost in sight and strength !~~

[*Falls.*

Car. My noble brother !

Bian. O, the curse of wretchedness !

My deadly hand is faln upon my lord :

Destruction, take me to thee ! give me way ;

The pains and plagues of a lost soul upon him

That hinders me a moment ! 230

Duke. My heart swells bigger yet ; help here, break't
 ope !

My breast ~~flies~~ open next. [*Die.*

Bian. O, with the poison

~~That was prepar'd for thee !~~ thee, Cardinal,

'Twas meant for thee.

Car. Poor prince !

Bian. Accusèd error !

Give me thy last breath, thou infected bosom,

And wrap two spirits in one poison'd vapour !

Thus, thus, reward thy murderer, and turn death

[*Kisses the dead body of the DUKE.*

Into a parting kiss ! my soul stands ready at my lips,

Even vex'd to stay one minute after thee.

Car. The greatest sorrow and astonishment 240

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Car. Sin, what thou art, these ruins show too piteously:
Two kings on one throne cannot sit together,
But one must needs down, for his title's wrong;
So where lust reigns, that prince cannot reign long.

[*Exeunt omnes.*]

**MORE DISSEMBLERS BESIDES
WOMEN.**

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

Lord Cardinal of Milan.
LACTANTIO, *his nephew.*
ANDRUGIO, *general of Milan.*
Father to Aurelia.
Governor of the Fort.
DONDOLO, *servant to Lactantio.*
CROTCHET, *a singing-master.*
SINQUAPACE, *a dancing-master.*
NICHOLAS, *his usher.*
Captain of the Gipsies.
Lords, Gipsies, Servants, and Guards.

Duchess of Milan.
CELIA, *her waiting-woman.*
AURELIA.
Page, Lactantio's mistress in disguise.

SCENE: MILAN and the neighbourhood.

MORE DISSEMBLERS BESIDES WOMEN.



ACT I.

SCENE I.

A Street.

Enter LACTANTIO, AURELIA, and Servant.

Song within.

*To be chaste is woman's glory,
'Tis her fame and honour's story :
Here sits she in funeral weeds,
Only bright in virtuous deeds ;
Come and read her life and praise,
That singing weeps, and sighing plays.*

Lac. Welcome, soul's music ! I've been listening here
To melancholy strains from the duchess' lodgings ;
That strange great widow, that has vow'd so stiffly
Ne'er to know love's heat in a second husband : 10

And she has kept the fort most valiantly,
 To th' wonder of her sex, this seven year's day,
 And that's no sorry trial. A month's constancy
 Is held a virtue in a city-widow ;
 And are they excell'd by so much more i' th' court ?
 My faith, a rare example for our wives !
 Heaven's blessing of her heart for it ! poor soul,
 She had need have somewhat to comfort her.
 What wouldst thou do, faith, now,
 If I were dead, suppose I were thy husband,
 As shortly I will be, and that's as good ?
 Speak freely, and thou lov'st me.

20

Aur. Alas, sir,
 I should not have the leisure to make vows ;
 For dying presently, I should be dead
 Before you were laid out !

Lac. Now fie upon thee for a hasty dier !
 Wouldst thou not see me buried ?

Aur. Talk not on't, sir,
 These many years, unless you take delight
 To see me swoon, or make a ghost of me.

Lac. Alas, poor soul ! I'll kiss thee into colour :
 Canst thou paint pale so quickly ? I perceive then 30
 Thou'dst go beyond the duchess in her vow,
 Thou'dst die indeed. What's he ?

Aur. Be settled, sir ;
 Spend neither doubt nor fear upon that fellow :
 Health cannot be more trusty to man's life
 Than he to my necessities in love.

Lac. I take him of thy word, and praise his face,

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Aur. The power of love commands me.

Lac. I shall wither

In comforts, till I see thee.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

SCENE II.

The Cardinal's Closet.

Enter Cardinal and Lords.

Car. My lords, I've work for you: when you have
hours

Free from the cares of state, bestow your eyes
Upon those abstracts of the duchess' virtues,
My study's ornaments. I make her constancy
The holy mistress of my contemplation ;
Whole volumes have I writ in zealous praise
Of her eternal vow: I have no power
To suffer virtue to go thinly clad.

I that have ever been in youth an old man
To pleasures and to women, and could never
Love, but pity 'em,

And all their momentary frantic follies,
Here I stand up in admiration,
And bow to the chaste health of our great duchess
Kissing her constant name. O my fair lords,
When we find grace confirm'd, especially
In a creature that's so doubtful as a woman,
We're spirit-ravish'd ; men of our probation
Feel the sphere's music playing in their souls.

So long, unto th' eternising of her sex, 20
 Sh'as kept her vow so strictly, and as chaste
 As everlasting life is kept for virtue,
 Even from the sight of men ; to make her oath
 As uncorrupt as th' honour of a virgin,
 That must be strict in thought, or else that title,
 Like one of frailty's ruins, shrinks to dust :
 No longer she's a virgin than she's just.

First Lord. Chaste, sir? the truth and justice of her
 VOW

To her deceas'd lord's able to make poor
 Man's treasury of praises. But, methinks, 30
 She that has no temptation set before her,
 Her virtue has no conquest : then would her constancy
 Shine in the brightest goodness of her glory,
 If she would give admittance, see and be seen,
 And yet resist, and conquer : there were argument
 For angels ; 'twould outreach the life of praise
 Set in mortality's shortness. I speak this
 Not for religion, but for love of her,
 Whom I wish less religious, and more loving :
 But I fear she's too constant, that's her fault ; 40
 But 'tis so rare, few of her sex are took with't,
 And that makes some amends.

Car. You've put my zeal into a way, my lord,
 I shall not be at peace till I make perfect :
 I'll make her victory harder ; 'tis my crown
 When I bring grace to great'st perfection ;
 And I dare trust that daughter with a world,
 None but her vow and she. I know she wears

A constancy will not deceive my praises,
 A faith so noble ; she that once knows heaven 50
 Need put in no security for her truth ;
 I dare believe her. Face,¹ use all the art,
 Temptation, witcheries, slights,² and subtleties,
 You temporal lords and all your means can practise——

Sec. Lord. My lord, not any we.

Car. Her resolute goodness
 Shall as a rock stand firm, and send the sin
 That beat[s] against it
 Into the bosom of the owners weeping.

Third Lord. We wish ³ her virtues so.

Car. O give me pardon !
 I've lost myself in her upon my friends. 60
 Your charitable censures ⁴ I beseech :
 So dear her white fame is to my soul's love,
 'Tis an affliction but to hear it question'd ;
 She's my religious triumph :
 If you desire a belief rightly to her,
 Think she can never waver, then you're sure :
 She has a fixed heart, it cannot err ;
 He kills my hopes of woman that doubts her.

First Lord. No more, my lord, 'tis fix'd.

Car. Believe my judgment ;
 I never praise in vain, nor ever spent 70

¹ "Was altered by the editor of 1816 to '*I dare believe her faith.*' Compare Shakespeare, *First P. of Henry VI.*, act v. sc. 3:—

'That Suffolk doth not flatter, *face*, or feign.'"—*Dyce.*

² Tricks.

³ Old. ed. "with."

⁴ Judgments.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

In years to rise in state, but his good parts
Will bring him in the sooner. Here he comes.

Enter LACTANTIO with a book.

What, at thy meditation? half in heaven?

Lac. The better half, my lord, my mind's there still;
And when the heart's above, the body walks here 100
But like an idle serving-man below,
Gaping and waiting for his master's coming.

Car. What man in age could bring forth graver
thoughts?

Lac. He that lives fourscore years is but like one
That stays here for a friend; when death comes, then
Away he goes, and is ne'er seen agen.
I wonder at the young men of our days,
That they can doat on pleasure, or what 'tis
They give that title to, unless in mockage:
There's nothing I can find upon the earth 110
Worthy the name of pleasure, unless 't be
To laugh at folly, which indeed good charity
Should rather pity; but of all the frenzies
That follow flesh and blood, O reverend uncle,
The most ridiculous is to fawn on women;
There's no excuse for that; 'tis such a madness,
There is no cure set down for't; no physician
Ever spent hour about it, for they guess'd
'Twas all in vain when they first lov'd themselves,
And never since durst practise; cry *Heu mihi*,¹ 120

¹ " *Hei mihi quod nullis amor est medicabilis herbis,*" Ovid, *Met.*
i. 523.

That's all the help they've for't. I had rather meet
 A witch far north, than a fine fool in love,
 The sight would less afflict me : but for modesty,
 And your grave presence that learns men respect,
 I should fall foul in words upon fond man,
 That can forget his excellence and honour,
 His serious meditations, being the end
 Of his creation to learn well to die,
 And live a prisoner to a woman's eye :
 Can there be greater thralldom, greater folly ? 130

Car. In making him my heir, I make good works,
 And they give wealth a blessing ; where,¹ on the contrary,
 What curses does he heap upon his soul
 That leaves his riches to a riotous young man,
 To be consum'd on surfeits, pride, and harlots !
 Peace be upon that spirit, whose life provides
 A quiet rest for mine ! [Aside.

*Enter Page.*²

Lac. How now ? the news ?

Page. A letter, sir [*gives letter to LACTANTIO*], brought
 by a gentleman
 That lately came from Rome.

Lac. That's she ; she's come ;
 I fear not to admit her in his presence, 140
 There is the like already : I'm writ chaste
 In my grave uncle's thoughts, and honest meanings

¹ Whereas.

² Lactantio's mistress disguised as a page.

Think all men's like their own. [*Aside.*]—Thou look'st
so pale!

What ail'st thou here a' late?

Page. I doubt I've cause, sir.

Lac. Why, what's the news?

Page. I fear, sir, I'm with child.

Lac. With child? peace, peace; speak low.

Page. 'Twill prove, I fear, so.

Lac. Beshrew my heart for that!—Desire the gentle-
man

To walk a turn or two.

Car. What gentleman?

Lac. One lately come from Rome, my lord, in credit
With Lord Vincentio; so the letter speaks him. 150

Car. Admit him, my kind boy. [*Exit Page.*]—The
prettiest servant

That ever man was bless'd with! 'tis so meek,
So good and gentle; 'twas the best alm's-deed
That e'er you did to keep him: I've oft took him
Weeping alone, poor boy, at the remembrance
Of his lost friends, which, as he says, the sea
Swallow'd, with all their substance.

Lac. 'Tis a truth, sir,
Has cost the poor boy many a feeling tear,
And me some too, for company: in such pity 159
I always spend my part. Here comes the gentleman.

Enter AURELIA, disguised as a man.

Car. Welcome to Milan, sir: how is the health
Of Lord Vincentio?

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

There's yet a rival whom you little dream of,
 Tax me with him, and I'll swear too I hate him ;
 I'll thrust 'em both together in one oath,
 And send 'em to some pair of waiting-women,
 To solder up their credits.

Lac. Prithee, what's he ?

Another yet ? for laughter' sake, discover him.

Aur. The governor of the fort.

Lac. That old dried neat's tongue !

190

Aur. A gentleman after my father's relish.

Enter AURELLA'S Father and Governor.

Fath. By your kind favours, gentlemen.

Aur. O, my father !

We're both betray'd.

Lac. Peace ; you may prove too fearful.—
 To whom your business, sir ?

Fath. To the Lord Cardinal,
 If it would please yourself, or that young gentleman,
 To grace me with admittance.

Lac. I will see, sir ;
 The gentleman's a stranger, new come o'er ;
 He understands you not.—

Loff tro veen, tantumbro, hoff tufftee locumber shaw. 199

Aur. *Quisquimken, sapadlaman, fool-urchin old astrata.*

Fath. Nay, and that be the language, we can speak it
 too :

*Strumpettikin, bold harlottum, queaninisma, whore-
 mongeria !*

Shame to thy sex, and sorrow to thy father !

Is this a shape for reputation
 And modesty to masque in? Thou too cunning
 For credulous goodness,
 Did not a reverent respect and honour,
 That's due unto the sanctimonious peace
 Of this lord's house, restrain my voice and anger, 210
 And teach it soft humility, I would lift
 Both your disgraces to the height of grief
 That you have rais'd in me; but to shame you
 I will not cast a blemish upon virtue:
 Call that your happiness, and the dearest too
 That such a bold attempt could ever boast of.
 We'll see if a strong fort can hold you now.—
 Take her, sir, to you.

Gov. How have I deserv'd
 The strangeness of this hour?

Fath. Talk not so tamely.—
 For you, sir, thank the reverence of this place, 220
 Or your hypocrisy I'd put out of grace,
 I had, i'faith; if ever I can fit you,
 Expect to hear from me.

[*Exeunt* Father, Governor, *and* AURELIA.]

Lac. I thank you, sir;
 The cough o' th' lungs requite you! I could curse him
 Into diseases by whole dozens now;
 But one's enough to beggar him, if he light
 Upon a wise physician. 'Tis a labour
 To keep those little wits I have about me.
 Still did I dream that villain would betray her:
 I'll never trust slave with a parboil'd nose again. 230

I must devise some trick t' excuse her absence
 Now to my uncle too ; there is no mischief
 But brings one villain[y] or other still
 Even close at heels on't. I am pain'd at heart ;
 If ever there were hope of me to die
 For love, 'tis now ; I never felt such gripings :
 If I can 'scape this climacterical year,
 Women ne'er trust me, though you hear me swear.
 Kept with him in the fort ? why, there's no hope
 Of ever meeting now, my way's not thither ; 240
 Love bless us with some means to get together,
 And I'll pay all the old reckonings. [Exit.

SCENE III.

Street before the Duchess's House.

Enter on a balcony Duchess and CELIA.

Duch. What a contented rest rewards my mind
 For faithfulness ! I give it constancy,
 And it returns me peace. How happily
 Might woman live, methinks, confin'd within
 The knowledge of one husband !
 What comes of more rather proclaims desire
 Prince of affections than religious love,
 Brings frailty and our weakness into question
 'Mongst our male enemies, makes widows' tears
 Rather the cup of laughter than of pity : 10
 What credit can our sorrows have with men,

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

To excellence in virtue, to keep back
The fears that might discourage you at first,
Pitying your strength, it show'd you not the worst :

λ Tis not enough for tapers to burn bright,
But to be seen, so to lend others light,
Yet not impair themselves, their flame as pure 40
As when it shin'd in secret ; so t' abide
· Temptations is the soul's flame truly tried.
I've an ambition, but a virtuous one ;
I'd have nothing want to your perfection.

Duch. Is there a doubt found yet ? is it so hard
For woman to recover, with all diligence,
And a true fasting faith from sensual pleasure,
What many of her sex has so long lost ?
Can you believe that any sight of man,
ι Held he the worth of millions in one spirit, 50
Had power to alter me ?

Car. No ; there's my hope,
My credit, and my triumph.

Duch. I'll no more
Keep strictly private, since the glory on't
Is but a virtue question'd ; I'll come forth
And show myself to all ; the world shall witness,
α, υ, ε That, like the sun, my constancy can look
On earth's corruptions, and shine clear itself.

Car. Hold conquest now, and I have all my wishes.

[*Cornets, and a shout within.*]

Duch. The meaning of that sudden shout, my lord ?

Car. Signor Andrugio, general of the field, 60
Successful in his fortunes, is arriv'd,

And met by all the gallant hopes of Milan,
 Welcom'd with laurel-wreaths and hymns of praises :
 Vouchsafe but you to give him the first grace, madam,
 Of your so long-hid presence, he has then
 All honours that can bless victorious man.

Duch. You shall prevail, grave sir.

[*Exit Cardinal above.*

*Enter ANDRUGIO, attended by the nobility, senators,
 and masquers.*

Song.

Laurel is a victor's due,

I give it you,

I give it you ;

70

Thy name with praise,

Thy brow with bays

We circle round :

All men rejoice

With cheerful voice,

To see thee like a conqueror crown'd.

[*A Cupid descending, sings :*

I am a little conqueror too ;

For wreaths of bays

There's arms of cross,¹

¹ "Arms of cross" = arms crossed on the breast (the attitude of a moody lover). Cf. *Love's Labour Lost*, iii. 1.—

"Regent of love-rhymes, lord of folded arms."

Philaster, ii. 3.—

"If it be love
 To sit cross-arm'd and sigh away the day."

*And that's my due: 80
 I give the flaming heart,
 It is my crest;
 And by the mother's side,
 The weeping eye,
 The sighing breast.
 It is not power in you, fair beauties;
 If I command love, 'tis your duties. [Ascends.*

*[During the preceding songs ANDRUGIO
 peruses a letter delivered to him by a
 Lord: the masque then closes with the
 following*

Song.

*Welcome, welcome, son of fame,
 Honour triumphs in thy name!*

[Exeunt all except Lord.

Lord. Alas, poor gentleman! I brought him news 90
 That like a cloud spread over all his glories:
 When he miss'd her whom his eye greedily sought for,
 His welcome seem'd so poor, he took no joy in't;
 But when he found her by her father forc'd
 To the old governor's love, and kept so strictly,
 A coldness strook his heart. There is no state
 So firmly happy but feels envy's might.
 I know Lactantio, nephew to the cardinal,
 Hates him as deeply as a rich man death;
 And yet his welcome show'd as fair and friendly 100
 As his that wore the truest love to him;

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

SCENE IV.

LACTANTIO'S *Lodging in the Cardinal's Mansion.*

Enter DONDOLO, and Page¹ carrying a shirt.

Page. I prithee, Dondolo, take this shirt and air it a little against my master rises; I had rather do anything than do't, i'faith.

Don. O monstrous, horrible, terrible, intolerable! are not you big enough to air a shirt? were it a smock now, you liquorish page, you'd be hanged ere you'd part from't. If thou dost not prove as arrant a smell-smock² as any the town affords in a term-time, I'll lose my judgment in wenching.

Page. Pish; here, Dondolo, prithee, take it. 20

Don. It's no more but up and ride³ with you then! all my generation were beadles and officers, and do you think I'm so easily entreated? you shall find a harder piece of work, boy, than you imagine, to get anything from my hands; I will not degenerate so much from the nature of my kindred; you must bribe me one way or other, if you look to have anything done, or else you may do't yourself: 'twas just my father's humour when

¹ Lactantio's mistress.

² "*Brigaille*, a notable *smel-smocke* or muttonmungar, a cunning solicitor of a wench."—*Colgrave*.

³ Cf. vol. iv. p. 67:—

"*Mis. G.* Then up and ride, i'faith!

"*Gal.* Up and ride? nay, my pretty Pru, that's far from my thought, duck: why, mouse, thy mind is nibbling at something."

he bore office. You know my mind, page ; the song ! the song ! I must either have the song you sung to my master last night when he went to bed, or I'll not do a stitch of service for you from one week's end to the other. As I am a gentleman, you shall brush cloaks, make clean spurs, nay, pull off strait boots, although in the tugging you chance to fall and hazard the breaking of your little buttocks ; I'll take no more pity of your marrow-bones than a butcher's dog of a rump of beef ; nay, ka me, ka thee ;¹ if you will ease the melancholy of my mind with singing, I will deliver you from the calamity of boots-haling. 30

Page. Alas, you know I cannot sing !

Don. Take heed ; you may speak at such an hour that your voice may be clean taken away from you : I have known many a good gentlewoman say so much as you say now, and have presently gone to bed and lay speechless : 'tis not good to jest, as old Chaucer was wont to say, that broad famous English poet. Cannot you sing, say you ? O that a boy should so keep cut with² his mother, and be given to dissembling !

Page. Faith, to your knowledge in't, ill may seem well ; 40

But as I hope in comforts, I've no skill.

Don. A pox of skill ! give me plain simple cunning : why should not singing be as well got without skill as

¹ An old proverbial expression, equivalent to *One good turn deserves another*. See Nares' *Glossary*.

² " *i.e.* follow the example of. The word is used by Sterne, in the same sense, in the fifth vol. of his *Tristram Shandy*."—Editor of 1816.

the getting of children? You shall have the arrantest fool do as much there as the wisest coxcomb of 'em all, let 'em have all the help of doctors put to 'em, both the directions of physicians, and the erections of pothecaries; you shall have a plain hobnailed country fellow, marrying some dairy-wench, tumble out two of a year, and sometimes three, byrlady, as the crop falls out; and your nice paling physicking gentlefolks some one in nine years, and hardly then a whole one as it should be; the wanting of some apricock or something loses a member on him, or quite spoils it. Come, will you sing, that I may warm the shirt? by this light, he shall put it on cold for me else. 56

Page. A song or two I learnt with hearing gentlewomen practise themselves.

Don. Come, you are so modest now, 'tis pity that thou wast ever bred to be thrust through a pair of canions;¹ thou wouldst have made a pretty foolish waiting-woman but for one thing. Wilt sing?

Page. As well as I can, Dondolo.

Don. Give me the shirt then, I'll warm't as well[^s] I can too.

Why, look, you whoreson coxcomb, this is a smock!

Page. No, 'tis my master's shirt.

Don. Why, that's true too;

Who knows not that? why, 'tis the fashion, fool;
All your young gallants here of late wear smocks,
Those without beards especially. 69

¹ Rolls of stuff at the bottom of the breeches below the knee.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

*Of the short velvet mask he was deviser,
That wives may kiss, the husbands ne'er the wiser ;
'Twas he first thought upon the way
To keep a lady's lips in play.*

Don. O rich, ravishing, rare, and enticing ! Well, go thy ways for as sweet a breasted¹ page as ever lay at his master's feet in a truckle-bed.² 102

Page. You'll hie you in straight, Dondolo ?

Don. I'll not miss you. [Exit Page.]

This smockified shirt, or shirted smock,
I will go toast. Let me see what's a'clock :
I must to th' castle straight to see his love,
Either by hook or crook : my master storming
Sent me last night, but I'll be gone this morning. [Exit.]

¹ See note 1, p. 350.

² A small bed fitted with castors, so that it could be wheeled under the chief or *standing* bed. At night it was drawn out to the foot of the larger bed. In the truckle-bed slept the master's attendant.

ACT II.

SCENE I.

An Apartment in the House of the Duchess.

Enter Duchess and CELIA.

Duch. Seek out the lightest colours can be got,
The youthfull'st dressings ; tawny is too sad,
I am not thirty yet ; I've wrong'd my time
To go so long in black, like a petitioner :
See that the powder that I use about me
Be rich in cassia.

Celia. Here's a sudden change ! [*Aside.*

Duch. O, I'm undone in faith ! Stay, art thou certain
Lactantio, nephew to the cardinal, was present
In the late entertainment of the general ?

Celia. Upon my reputation with your excellence, 10
These eyes beheld him : he came foremost, madam ;
'Twas he in black and yellow.

Duch. Nay, 'tis no matter, either for himself
Or for the affection of his colours,
So you be sure he was there.

Celia. As sure as sight
Can discern man from man, madam.

Duch. It suffices.

[*Exit CELIA.*

O, an ill cause had need of many helps,
 Much art, and many friends, ay, and those mighty,
 Or else it sets in shame ! A faith once lost
 Requires great cunning ere't be entertain'd
 Into the breast of a belief again ;
 There's no condition so unfortunate,
 Poor, miserable, to any creature given,
 As hers that breaks in vow ; she breaks with heaven.

20

Enter Cardinal.

Car. Increase of health and a redoubled courage
 To chastity's great soldier ! what, so sad, madam ?—
 The memory of her seven-years-deceas'd lord
 Springs yet into her eyes as fresh and full
 As at the seventh hour after his departure :
 What a perpetual fountain is her virtue !— [Aside. 30
 Too much t' afflict yourself with ancient sorrow
 Is not so strictly for your strength requir'd ;
 Your vow is charge enough, believe me 'tis, madam,
 You need no weightier task.

Duch. Religious sir,
 You heard the last words of my dying lord.

Car. Which I shall ne'er forget.

Duch. May I entreat
 Your goodness but to speak 'em over to me,
 As near as memory can befriend your utterance,
 That I may think awhile I stand in presence
 Of my departing husband.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

*Unto the man that ever should enjoy thee :
O, a new torment strikes his force into me
When I but think on't! I am rack'd and torn ;
Pity me in thy virtues.*

*Duch. My lov'd lord,
Let you[r] confirm'd opinion of my life,
My love, my faithful love, seal an assurance
Of quiet to your spirit, that no forgetfulness
Can cast a sleep so deadly on my senses,
To draw my affections to a second liking.*

70

*Car. 'T has ever been thy¹ promise, and the spring
Of my great love to thee. For once to marry
Is honourable in woman, and her ignorance
Stands for a virtue, coming new and fresh ;
But second marriage shows desire in flesh ;
Thence lust, and heat, and common custom grows ;
But she's part virgin who but one man knows.
I here expect a work of thy great faith
At my last parting ; I can crave no more,
And with thy vow I rest myself for ever ;
My soul and it shall fly to heaven together :
Seal to my spirit that quiet satisfaction,
And I go hence in peace.*

80

Duch. Then here I vow never——

Car. Why, madam !

Duch. I can go no further.

Car. What,

Have you forgot your vow ?

¹ Old ed. "the."

Duch. I have, too certainly.

Car. Your vow? that cannot be; it follows now
Just where I left. 90

Duch. My frailty gets before it;
Nothing prevails but ill.

Car. What ail you, madam?

Duch. Sir, I'm in love.

Car. O, all you powers of chastity,
Look to this woman! let her not faint now,
For honour of yourselves! If she be lost,
I know not where to seek my hope in woman.
Madam, O madam!

Duch. My desires are sicken'd
Beyond recovery of good counsel, sir.

Car. What mischief ow'd a malice to the sex,
To work this spiteful ill! better the man 100
Had never known creation, than to live
Th' unlucky ruin of so fair a temple.
Yet think upon your vow, revive in faith;
Those are eternal things: what are all pleasures,
Flatteries of men, and follies upon earth,
To your most excellent goodness? O she's dead,
Stark cold to any virtuous claim within her!
What now is heat is sin's. Have I approv'd
Your constancy for this, call'd your faith noble,
Writ volumes of your victories and virtues? 110
I have undone my judgment, lost my praises,
Blemish'd the truth of my opinion.
Give me the man, that I may pour him out
To all contempt and curses.

Duch. The man's innocent,
Full of desert and grace ; his name Lactantio.

Car. How ?

Duch. Your nephew.

Car. My nephew ?

Duch. Beshrew the sight of him ! he lives not, sir,
That could have conquer'd me, himself excepted.

Car. He that I lov'd so dearly, does he wear
Such killing poison in his eye to sanctity ? 120

He has undone himself for ever by't ;
Has lost a friend of me, and a more sure one.
Farewell all natural pity ! though my affection
Could hardly spare him from my sight an hour,
I'll lose him now eternally, and strive
To live without him ; he shall straight to Rome.

Duch. Not if you love my health or life, my lord.

Car. This day he shall set forth.

Duch. Despatch me rather.

Car. I'll send him far enough.

Duch. Send me to death first.

Car. No basilisk, that strikes dead pure affection 130
With venomous eye, lives under my protection. [*Exit.*

Duch. Now my condition's worse than e'er 'twas
yet ;

My cunning takes not with him ; has broke through
The net that with all art was set for him,
And left the snarer here herself entangled
With her own toils. O, what are we poor souls,
When our dissembling fails us ? surely creatures
As full of want as any nation can be,

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

I love his good as dearly as her vow,
 Yet there my credit lives in works and praises:
 I never found a harder fight within me, 20
 Since zeal first taught me war; say I should labour
 To quench this love, and so quench life and all,
 As by all likelihood it would prove her death,
 For it must needs be granted she affects him
 As dearly as the power of love can force,
 Since her vow awes her not, that was her saint;
 What right could that be to religion,
 To be her end, and dispossess my kinsman?
 No, I will bear in pity to her heart,
 The rest commend to fortune and my art. [Exit. 30

SCENE III.

An Apartment in the Castle.

*Enter AURELIA'S Father, GOVERNOR, AURELIA, and
ANDRUGIO disguised.*

Gov. I like him passing well.

Fath. He's a tall fellow.

And. A couple of tall¹ wits. [*Aside.*—I've seen
some service, sir.

Gov. Nay, so it seems by thy discourse, good fellow.

And. Good fellow? ² calls me thief familiarly.—[*Aside*
I could show many marks of resolution,

¹ Fine, great.

² *Good fellow* was a cant term for a thief. Cf. vol. ii. p. 268, l. 20.

But modesty could wish 'em rather hidden :
 I fetch'd home three-and-twenty wounds together
 In one set battle, where I was defeated
 At the same time of the third part of my nose ;
 But meeting with a skilful surgeon,
 Took order for my snuffing.

10

Gov. And a nose
 Well heal'd is counted a good cure in these days ;
 It saves many a man's honesty, which else
 Is quickly drawn into suspicion.
 This night shall bring you acquainted with your
 charge ;

In the meantime you and your valour's welcome :
 Would w'had more store of you, although they
 come

With fewer marks about 'em !

Fath. So wish I, sir. [*Exeunt* Father and Governor.

And. I was about to call her, and she stays
 Of her own gift, as if she knew my mind ;
 Certain she knows me not, not possible.

20

[*Aside.*

Anr. What if I left my token and my letter
 With this strange fellow, so to be convey'd
 Without suspicion to Lactantio's servant ?
 Not so, I'll trust no freshman with such secrets ;
 His ignorance may mistake, and give't to one
 That may belong to th' general, for I know
 He sets some spies about me ; but all he gets
 Shall not be worth his pains. I would Lactantio
 Would seek some means to free me from this place ;
 'Tis prisonment enough to be a maid,

30

But to be mew'd up too, that case is hard,
As if a toy were kept by a double guard.

[*Aside, and going.*]

And. Away she steals again, not minding me :
'Twas not at me she offer'd. [*Aside.*]—Hark you, gentle-
woman.

Aur. With me, sir ?

And. I could call you by your name,
But gentle's the best attribute to woman.

Aur. Andrugio ? O, as welcome to my lips
As morning dew to roses ! my first love !

And. Why, have you more then ?

Aur. What a word was there !

40

More than thyself what woman could desire,
If reason had a part of her creation ?
For loving you, you see, sir, I'm a prisoner,
There's all the cause they have against me, sir ;
A happy persecution I so count on't :
If anything be done to me for your sake,
'Tis pleasing to me.

And. Are you not abus'd,
Either through force or by your own consent ?
Hold you your honour perfect and unstain'd ?
Are you the same still that at my departure
My honest thoughts maintain'd you to my heart ?

50

Aur. The same most just.

And. Swear't.

Aur. By my hope of fruitfulness,
Love, and agreement, the three joys of marriage !

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Aur. True, the same, sir ;
I saw the like this morning. Say no more, sir ;
I apprehend you fully.

And. What, you do not ?

Aur. No ? hark you, sir. [*Whispers.*

And. Now by this light 'tis true !
Sure if you prove as quick as your conceit, So
You'll be an excellent breeder.

Aur. I should do reason by the mother's side, sir,
If fortune do her part in a good getter.

And. That's not to do now, sweet, the man stands
near thee.

Aur. Long may he stand most fortunately, sir,
Whom her kind goodness has appointed for me.

And. Awhile I'll take my leave t' avoid suspicion.

Aur. I do commend your course : good sir, forget me
not.

And. All comforts sooner.

Aur. Liberty is sweet, sir.

And. I know there's nothing sweeter, next to love, so
But health itself, which is the prince of life.

Aur. Your knowledge raise you, sir !

And. Farewell till evening. [*Exit*

Aur. And after that, farewell, sweet sir, for ever.
A good kind gentleman to serve our turn with,
But not for lasting ; I have chose a stuff
Will wear out two of him, and one finer too :
I like not him that has two mistresses,
War and his sweetheart ; he can ne'er please both :
And war's a soaker, she's no friend to us ;

Turns a man home sometimes to his mistress 100
Some forty ounces poorer than he went ;
All his discourse out of the Book of Surgery,
Cere-cloth and salve, and lies you all in tents,¹
Like your camp-vict'lers : out upon't ! I smile
To think how I have fitted him with an office :
His love takes pains to bring our loves together,
Much like your man that labours to get treasure,
To keep his wife high for another's pleasure. [*Exit.*

¹ Rolls of lint, or other material, used in dressing wounds. Webster has the same pun in *The Duchess of Malfi*, i. 1:—"She told him, my lord, he was a pitiful fellow, to lie, like the children of Israel, all in tents."

ACT III.

SCENE I

LACTANTIO'S *Lodgings in the Cardinal's Mansion.*

Enter LACTANTIO and Page.

Page. Think of your shame and mine.

Lac. I prithee, peace :

Thou art th' unfortunat'st piece of taking business
That ever man repented when day peep'd ;
I'll ne'er keep such a piece of touchwood again,
And I were rid of thee once. Well fare those
That never sham'd their master ! I've had such,
And I may live to see the time again ;
I do not doubt on't.

Page. If my too much kindness
Receive your anger only for reward,
The harder is my fortune : I must tell you, sir, 10
To stir your care up to prevention,
(Misfortunes must be told as well as blessings,)
When I left all my friends in Mantua,
For your love's sake alone, then, with strange oaths
• • You promis'd present marriage.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Don. Never in better fooling in my life.

Lac. What's this to th' purpose?

Don. Nay, 'twas nothing to th' purpose, that's certain.

Lac. How wretched this slave makes me! Didst not see her?

Don. I saw her.

Lac. Well, what said she then?

Don. Not a word, sir.

Lac. How, not a word?

Don. Proves her the better maid,

For virgins should be seen more than they're beard. 40

Lac. Exceeding good, sir; you are no¹ sweet villain!

Don. No, faith, sir, for you keep me in foul linen.

Lac. Turn'd scurvy rhymers, are you?

Don. Not scurvy neither,

Though I be somewhat itchy in the profession:

If you could hear me out with patience, I know

Her mind as well as if I were in her belly.

Lac. Thou saidst even now she never spake a word.

Don. But she gave certain signs, and that's as good.

Lac. Canst thou conceive by signs?

Don. O, passing well, sir,

Even from an infant! did you ne'er know that? 50

I was the happiest child in all our country;

I was born of a dumb woman.

Lac. How?

Don. Stark dumb, sir.

My father had a rare bargain of her, a rich pennyworth;

¹ Ironical.

There would have been but too much money given for her:

A justice of peace was about her ; but my father,
Being then constable, carried her before him.

Lac. Well, since we're enter'd into these dumb shows,
What were the signs she gave you ?

Don. Many and good, sir.

Imprimis, she first gap'd, but that I guess'd 60
Was done for want of air, 'cause she's kept close ;
But had she been abroad and gap'd as much,
'T had been another case : then cast she up
Her pretty eye and wink'd ; the word methought was
then,

Come not till twitterlight :¹

Next, thus her fingers went, as who should say,
I'd fain have a hole broke to 'scape away ;
Then look'd upon her watch, and twice she nodded,
As who should say, the hour will come, sweetheart,
That I shall make two noddies of my keepers. 70

Lac. A third of thee. Is this your mother-tongue ?
My hopes are much the wiser for this language :
There's no such curse in love to² an arrant ass !

Don. O yes, sir, yes, an arrant whore's far worse.
You never lin³

Railing on me from one week's end to another ;
But you can keep a little tit-mouse page there,
That's good for nothing but to carry toothpicks.

¹ Twilight. See note 1, vol. iii. p. 230.

² In comparison with.

³ Cease.

Put up your pipe or so, that's all he's good for :
 He cannot make him ready¹ as he should do ; 80
 I am fain to truss his points² every morning ;
 Yet the proud, scornful ape, when all the lodgings
 Were taken up with strangers th' other night,
 He would not suffer me to come to bed to him,
 But kick'd and prick'd and pinch'd me like an urchin ;³
 There's no good quality in him : o' my conscience,
 I think he scarce knows how to stride a horse ;
 I saw him with a little hunting nag
 But thus high t'other day, and he was fain
 To lead him to a high rail, and get up like a butter-
 wench : 90

There's no good fellowship in this dandiprat,⁴
 This dive-dapper,⁵ as is in other pages :
 They'd go a-swimming with me familiarly
 I' th' heat of summer, and clap what-you-call-'ems ;
 But I could never get that little monkey yet
 To put off his breeches :

A tender, puling, nice, chitty-fac'd squall⁶ 'tis.

Lac. Is this the good you do me ? his love's wretched,
 And most distress'd, that must make use of fools.

Don. Fool to my face still ! that's unreasonable ; 100
 I will be a knave one day for this trick.

¹ " Make him ready " = dress himself.

² " Truss his points " = tie the tags of his breeches.

³ (1) Hedgehog, (2) sprite.—In the present passage the word seems to have both meanings.

⁴ See note 1, vol. i. p. 28.

⁵ Didapper, dab-chick.

⁶ The term was usually applied to girls : see note, vol. i. p. 267.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Enter Cardinal.

Car. What ails this pretty boy to weep so often?—
 Tell me the cause, child;—how his eyes stand full!—
 Beshrew you, nephew, you're too bitter to him!
 He is so soft, th' unkindness of a word
 Melts him into a woman.—'Las, poor boy,
 Thou shalt not serve him longer; 'twere great pity
 That thou shouldst wait upon an angry master:
 I've promis'd thee to one will make much of thee,
 And hold thy weak youth in most dear respect.

Page. O, I beseech your grace that I may serve 140
 No master else!

Car. Thou shalt not: mine's a mistress,
 The greatest mistress in all Milan, boy,
 The duchess' self.

Page. Nor her, nor any.

Car. Cease, boy!
 Thou know'st not thine own happiness, through
 fondness,¹

And therefore must be learnt: go, dry thine eyes.

Page. This rather is the way to make 'em moister.

[*Aside, and exit.*]

Car. Now, nephew! nephew!

Lac. O, you've snatch'd my spirit, sir,
 From the divinest meditation
 That ever made soul happy!

Car. I'm afraid
 I shall have as much toil to bring him on now, 150

¹ Foolishness.

As I had pains to keep her off from him. [*Aside.*
 I've thought it fit, nephew, considering
 The present barrenness of our name and house,
 The only famine of succeeding honour,
 To move the ripeness of your time to marriage.

Lac. How, sir, to marriage?

Car. Yes, to a fruitful life :
 We must not all be strict ; so generation
 Would lose her right : thou'rt young ; 'tis my desire
 To see thee bestow'd happily in my lifetime.

Lac. Does your grace well remember who I am, 160
 When you speak this ?

Car. Yes, very perfectly ;
 You're a young man, full in the grace of life,
 And made to do love credit ; proper, handsome,
 And for affection pregnant.

Lac. I beseech you, sir,
 Take off your praises rather than bestow 'em
 Upon so frail a use. Alas, you know, sir,
 I know not what love is, or what you speak of !
 If woman be amongst it, I shall swoon ;
 Take her away, for contemplation's sake :
 Most serious uncle, name no such thing to me. 170

Car. Come, come, you're fond :
 Prove but so strict and obstinate in age,
 And you are well to pass. There's honest love
 Allow'd you now for recreation ;
 The years will come when all delights must leave you,
 Stick close to virtue then ; in the meantime
 There's honourable joys to keep youth company ;

And if death take you there, dying no adulterer,
 You're out of his eternal reach ; defy him.
 List hither ; come to me, and with great thankfulness 180
 Welcome thy fortunes ; 'tis the duchess loves thee !

Lac. The duchess ?

Car. Doats on thee ; will die for thee,
 Unless she may enjoy thee.

Lac. She must die then.

Car. How ?

Lac. 'Las, do you think she ever means to do't, sir ?
 I'll sooner believe all a woman speaks
 Than that she'll die for love : she has a vow, my lord,
 That will keep life in her.

Car. Believe me, then,
 That should have bounteous interest in thy faith,
 She's thine, and not her vow's.

Lac. The¹ more my sorrow, 190
 My toil, and my destruction.—My blood dances !

[*Aside.*

Car. And though that bashful maiden virtue in thee,
 That never held familiar league with woman,
 Binds fast all pity to her heart that loves thee,
 Let me prevail, my counsel stands up to thee,
 Embrace it as the fulness of thy fortunes,
 As if all blessings upon earth were clos'd
 Within one happiness, for such another
 Whole life could never meet with : go and present

¹ "The more . . . destruction." These words form part of the Cardinal's speech in the old ed.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Car. You lights of state, truth's friends, ~~and~~
 honour'd lords,
 Faithful admirers of our duchess' virtues,
 And firm believers, it appears as plain
 As knowledge to the eyes of industry,
 That neither private motion, which holds counsel
 Often with woman's frailty and her blood,
 Nor public sight, the lightning of temptations,
 Which from the eye strikes sparks into the bosom,
 And sets whole hearts on fire, hath power to raise
 A heat in her 'bove that which feeds chaste life,
 And gives that cherishing means ;she's the same stil
 And seems so seriously employ'd in soul,
 As if she could not 'tend to cast an eye
 Upon deserts so low as those in man.
 It merits famous memory I confess ;
 Yet many times when I behold her youth,
 And think upon the lost hopes of posterity,
 Succession, and the royal fruits of beauty,
 All by the rashness of one vow made desperate,
 It goes so near my heart, I feel it painful,
 And wakes me into pity oftentimes,
 When others sleep unmov'd.

First Lord. I speak it faithfully,
 For 'tis your fame to boast of a disease,
 Your grace has not endur'd that pain alone,
 'T has been a grief of mine ; but where's the remedy :

Car. ~~There~~ there your lordship spake enough in litt
~~There's nothing~~ to be hop'd for but repulses ;
~~She's not to seek~~ for armour against love

That has bid battle to his powers so long ; 250
He that should try her now had need come strong,
And with more force than his own arguments,
Or he may part disgrac'd, being put to flight ;
That soldier's tough has been in seven years' fight.
Her vow's invincible ; for you must grant this,—
If those desires, train'd up in flesh and blood
To war continually 'gainst good intents,
Prove all too weak for her, having advantage
Both of her sex and her unskilfulness
At a spiritual weapon, wanting knowledge 260
To manage resolution, and yet win,
What force can a poor argument bring in ?
The books that I have publish'd in her praise
Commend her constancy, and that's fame-worthy ;
But if you read me o'er with eyes of enemies,
You cannot justly and with honour tax me
That I dissuade her life from marriage there :
Now heaven and fruitfulness forbid, not I !
She maybe constant there, and the hard war
Of chastity is held a virtuous strife, 270
As rare in marriage as in single life ;
Nay, by some writers rarer ; hear their reasons,
And you'll approve 'em fairly. She that's single,
Either in maid or widow, oftentimes
The fear of shame, more than the fear of heaven,
Keeps chaste and constant ; when the tempest comes,
She knows she has no shelter for her sin,
It must endure the weathers of all censure ;
Nothing but sea and air that poor bark feels :

When she in wedlock is like a safe vessel
 That lies at anchor ; come what weathers can,
 She has her harbour ; at her great¹ unloading,
 Much may be stoln, and little waste ;² the master
 Thinks himself rich enough with what he has,
 And holds content by that. How think you now, lords ?
 If she that might offend safe does not err,
 What's chaste in others is most rare in her.

Sec. Lord. What wisdom but approves it ?

First Lord. But, my lord,
 This should be told to her it concerns most ;
 Pity such good things should be spoke and lost. 290

Car. That were the way to lose 'em utterly ;
 You quite forget her vow : yet, now I think on't,
 What is that vow ? 'twas but a thing enforc'd,
 Was it not, lords ?

First Lord. Merely compell'd indeed.

Car. Only to please the duke ; and forcèd virtue
 Fails in her merit, there's no crown prepar'd for't.
 What have we done, my lords ? I fear we've sinn'd
 In too much strictness to uphold her in't,
 In cherishing her will ; for woman's goodness
 Takes counsel of that first, and then determines ; 300
 She cannot truly be call'd constant now,
 If she persèver, rather obstinate,
 The vow appearing forcèd, as it proves,
 Tried by our purer thoughts ; the grace and triumph

¹ I can hardly resist reading "at her *freight's* unloading."

² Altered by the editor of 1816 to "miss'd," which seems to be an improvement.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Enter LACTANTIO.

Are you c
You should have stay'd yet longer, and ha
Dead, to requite your haste.

Lac. Love bless you better, madam!

Duch. Must I bid welcome to the man
The cause of my vow's breach, my honour
One that does all the mischief to my fame,
And mocks my seven years' conquest with
This is a force of love was never felt;
But I'll not grudge at fortune, I will take
Captivity cheerfully: here, seize upon me,
And if thy heart can be so pitiless
To chain me up for ever in those arms,
I'll take it mildly, ay, and thank my stars,
For we're all subject to the chance of war!

Lac. We are so ; yet take comfort, vanquish'd duchess,
I'll use you like an honourable prisoner,
You shall be [well] entreated ; day shall be
Free for all sports to you, the night for me ;
That's all I challenge, all the rest is thine ;
And for your fare 't shall be no worse than mine.

Duch. Nay, then, I'm heartily pleasant, and as merry
As one that owes no malice, and that's well, sir :
You cannot say so much for your part, can you ?

Lac. Faith, all that I owe is to one man, madam, 40
And so can few men say : marry, that malice
Wears no dead flesh about it, 'tis a stinger.

Duch. What is he that shall dare to be your enemy,
Having our friendship, if he be a servant
And subject to our law ?

Lac. Yes, trust me, madam,
Of a vild¹ fellow I hold him a true subject ;
There's many arrant knaves that are good subjects,
Some for their living's sakes, some for their lives,
That will unseen eat men, and drink their wives.

Duch. They are as much in fault that know such
people, 50
And yet conceal 'em from the whips of justice.
For love's sake give me in your foe betimes,
Before he vex you further ; I will order him
To your heart's wishes, load him with disgraces,
That your revenge shall rather pity him
Than wish more weight upon him.

Lac. Say you so, madam?—

Here's a bless'd hour, that feeds both love and hate ;
Then take thy time, brave malice. [*Aside.*]—Virtuous
princess,

The only enemy that my vengeance points to
Lives in Andrugio.

Duch. What, the general? 60

Lac. That's the man, madam.

Duch. Are you serious, sir?

Lac. As at my prayers.

Duch. We meet happily then
In both our wishes ; he's the only man
My will has had a longing to disgrace,
For divers capital contempts ; my memory
Shall call 'em all together now ; nay, sir,
I'll bring his faith in war now into question,
And his late conference with the enemy.

Lac. Byrlady, a shrewd business and a dangerous !
Signor, your neck's a-cracking.

Duch. Stay, stay, sir ; 70
Take pen and ink.

Lac. Here's both, and paper, madam.

Duch. I'll take him in a fine trap.

Lac. That were excellent.

Duch. A letter so writ would abuse him strangely.

Lac. Good madam, let me understand your mind,
And then take you no care for his abusing ;
I serve for nothing else. I can write fast and
fair,

Most true orthography, and observe my stops.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Lac. But a woman; a comma at woman. [Writing.]

Duch. And what a woman is, a wise man knows. 99

Lac. Wise man knows; a full prick there. [Writing.]

Duch. Perhaps my condition¹ may seem blunt to you—

Lac. Blunt to you; a comma here again. [Writing.]

Duch. But no man's love can be more sharp set—

Lac. Sharp set; there a colon, for colon² is sharp set oftentimes. [Writing.]

Duch. And I know desires in both sexes have skill at that weapon.

Lac. Skill at that weapon; a full prick here at weapon. [Writing. 109]

Duch. So, that will be enough; subscribe it thus now, One that vows service to your affections; signor such a one.

Lac. Signor Andrugio, G.; that stands for general.

[Writing.]

Duch. And you shall stand for goose-cap. [Aside.]—

Give me that: [Taking letter.]

Betake you to your business speedily, sir;
We give you full authority from our person,
In right of reputation, truth, and honour,
To take a strong guard, and attach his body;
That done, to bring him presently before us;
Then we know what to do.

Lac. My hate finds wings;
Man's spirit flies swift to all revengeful things. 120

[Aside, and exit.]

¹ Disposition.

² The largest of the intestines. See note 1, vol. v. p. 38.

Duck. Why, here's the happiness of my desires ;
The means safe, unsuspected, far from thought ;
His state is like the world's condition right,
Greedy of gain, either by fraud or stealth ;
And whilst one toils, another gets the wealth. [*Exit.*

ACT IV.

SCENE I.

The Encampment of the Gipsies, near Milan.

Enter ANDRUGIO.

And. Now, fortune, show thyself the friend of love,
Make her way plain and safe; cast all their eyes
That guard the castle
Into a thicker blindness than thine own,
Darker than ignorance or idolatry,
That in that shape my love may pass unknown,
And by her freedom set my comforts free.
This is the place appointed for our meeting,
Yet comes she [not]; I'm covetous of her sight;
That gipsy-habit alters her so far
From knowledge, that our purpose cannot err;
She might have been here now by this time largely,
And much to spare: I would not miss her now
In this plight for the loss of a year's joy.
She's ignorant of this house, nor knows she where
Or which way to bestow herself through fear.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

This shape's too cunning for 'em ; all the sport was,
 The porter would needs know his fortune of me
 As I pass'd by him : 'twas such a plunge ¹ to me,
 I knew not how to bear myself ; at last
 I did resolve of somewhat, look'd in's hand,
 Then shook my head, bade him make much on's eyes,
 He'd lose his sight clean long before he dies ; 41
 And so away went I ; he lost the sight of me quickly :
 I told him his fortune truer for nothing than some
 Of my' complexion that would have cozen'd him of his
 money.

This is the place of meeting ; where's this man now
 That has took all this care and pains for nothing ?
 The use of him is at the last cast now,
 Shall only bring me to my former face again,
 And see me somewhat cleaner at his cost,
 And then farewell, Andrugio ; when I'm handsome, 50
 I'm for another straight. I wonder, troth,
 That he would miss me thus ; I could have took
 Many occasions besides this to have left him ;
 I'm not in want, he need not give me any ;
 A woman's will has still enough to spare
 To help her friends, and ² need be. What, not yet ?
 What will become of me in this shape then ?
 If I know where to go, I'm no dissembler ;
 And I'll not lose my part in woman ³ so
 For such a trifle, to forswear myself. 60
 But comes he not indeed ?

¹ Difficulty, perplexity.

² If.

³ Old ed. "one woman."

Enter DONDOLO.

Don. O excellent! by this light here's one of them! I thank my stars: I learnt that phrase in the Half-moon tavern. [*Aside.*—By your leave, good gipsy; I pray how far off is your company?

Aur. O happiness! this is the merry fellow My love, signor Lactantio, takes delight in; I'll send him away speedily with the news Of my so strange and fortunate escape, And he'll provide my safety at an instant. [*Aside.* 70 My friend, thou serv'st signor Lactantio?

Don. Who, I serve? gipsy, I scorn your motion;¹ and if the rest of your company give me no better words, I will hinder 'em the stealing of more pullen² than fifty poulterers were ever worth, and prove a heavier enemy to all their pig-booties; they shall travel like Jews, that hate swine's flesh, and never get a sow by th' ear all their lifetime. I serve Lactantio! I scorn to serve anybody; I am more gipsy-minded than so: though my face look of a Christian colour, if my belly were ripped up, you shall find my heart as black as any patch about you. The truth is, I am as arrant a thief as the proudest of your company; I'll except none: I am run away from my master in the state of a fool, and till I be a perfect knave I never mean to return again. 85

Aur. I'm ne'er the happier for this fortune now; It did but mock me. [*Aside.*

Don. Here they come, here they come!

¹ See note 1, vol. ii. p. 59.

² Poultry.—Okl ed. "pully."

Enter Gipsy Captain with a company of Gipsies, male and female, carrying booties of hens and ducks, &c., and singing.

*G. Cap. Come, my dainty doxies,
My dells,¹ my dells most dear;
We have neither house nor land,
Yet never want good cheer.*

90

Chorus. We never want good cheer.

G. Cap. We take no care for candle rents.

Sec. Gip. We lie.

Th. Gip. We snort.

*G. Cap. We sport in tents,
Then rouse betimes and steal our dinners.
Our store is never taken
Without pigs, hens, or bacon,
And that's good meat for sinners:
At wakes and fairs we cozen
Poor country folks by dozen;
If one have money, he disburses;
Whilst some tell fortunes, some pick purses;
Rather than be out of use,
We'll steal garters, hose, or shoes,
Boots, or spurs with gingling rowels,
Shirts or napkins, smocks or towels.
Come live with us, come live with us,
All you that love your eases;*

100

¹ See note 3. vol. iv. p. 127.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Don. She's a thief on both sides.

G. Cap. Give me thy hand ; thou art no bastard born,
We have not a more true-bred thief amongst us.

Gipsies. Not any, captain.

Don. I pray, take me into some grace amongst you too ; for though I claim no goodness from my parents to help me forward into your society, I had two uncles that were both hanged for robberies, if that will serve your turn, and a brave cut-purse to my cousin-german : if kindred will be taken, I am as near akin to a thief as any of you that had fathers and mothers. 143

G. Cap. What is it thou requirest, noble cousin ?

Don. Cousin ? nay, and we be so near akin already, now we are sober, we shall be sworn brothers when we are drunk : the naked truth is, sir, I would be made a gipsy as fast as you could devise.

G. Cap. A gipsy ?

Don. Ay, with all the speed you can, sir ; the very sight of those stolen hens eggs me forward horribly. 151

G. Cap. Here's dainty ducks too, boy.

Don. I see 'em but too well ; I would they were all rotten roasted and stuffed with onions.

G. Cap. Lov'st thou the common food of Egypt,
onions ?

Don. Ay, and garlic too ; I have smelt out many a knave by't ; but I could never smell mine own breath yet, and that's many a man's fault ; he can smell out a knave in another sometimes three yards off, yet his nose standing so nigh his mouth, he can never smell out himself.

G. Cap. A pregnant gipsy !

Gipsies. A most witty sinner !

G. Cap. Stretch forth thy hand, coz : art thou fortunate ?

Don. How ? fortunate ? nay, I cannot tell that myself ; wherefore do I come to you but to learn that ? I have sometimes found money¹ in old shoes ; but if I had not stolen more than I have found, I had had but a scurvy thin-cheeked fortune on't.

G. Cap. [*taking DONDOLO's hand.*] Here's a fair table.

Don. Ay, so has many a man that has given over housekeeping ; a fair table, when there's neither cloth nor meat upon't. 173

G. Cap. What a brave line of life's here ; look you, gipsies.

Don. I have known as brave a line² end in a halter.

G. Cap. But thou art born to precious fortune.

Don. The devil I am !

G. Cap. *Bette bucketto.*

Don. How, to beat bucks ?

G. Cap. *Stealee bacono.* 180

Don. O, to steal bacon ; that's the better fortune o' th' two indeed.

G. Cap. Thou wilt be shortly captain of the gipsies.

Don. I would you'd make me corporal i' th' meantime, Or standard-bearer to the women's regiment.

¹ " This is an allusion to a popular superstition, that the fairies, from their love of cleanliness, used at night to drop money into the shoes of good servants as a reward."—Editor of 1816.

² The palm of the hand.

³ Old ed. " live."

G. Cap. Much may be done for love.

Don. Nay, here's some money ;

I know an office comes not all for love.

[*Feels in his pocket.*]

A pox of your lime-twigs ! you have't all already.

G. Cap. It lies but here in cash for thine own use,
boy. 189

Don. Nay, an't lie there once, I shall hardly come to the fingering on't in haste ; yet make me an apt scholar, and I care not : teach me but so much gipsy, to steal as much more from another, and the devil do you good of that.

G. Cap. Thou shalt have all thy heart requires :

First, here's a girl for thy desires ;

This doxy fresh, this new-come dell,¹

Shall lie by thy sweet side and swell.

Get me gipsies brave and tawny,

With cheek full plump and hip full brawny ; 200

Look you prove industrious dealers,

To serve the commonwealth with stealers,

That th' unhous'd race of fortune-tellers

May never fail to cheat town-dwellers,

Or, to our universal grief,

Leave country fairs without a thief.

This is all you have to do,

Save every hour a filch or two.

Be it money, cloth, or pullen :²

When the evening's brow looks sullen, 210

¹ See note 3, vol. iv. p. 127.

² Poultry.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

G. Cap. why, arsinio.

Don. Arsinio! faith, methinks you mi
a sweeter word for't.

Enter AURELIA's Father and G

G. Cap. Stop, stop! fresh booties,—
noroes,

Calavario, fulkadelio.

still sometimes found among children, of laying the
dock upon a place that has been stung by a nettle,
kind of charm, the words '*in dock, out nettle,*' as long
continued."—Editor of 1816. '*In dock, out nettle*'
a proverb for inconstancy. Cf. *Troilus and Crys*

"But kanstow pleyen raket, to and fro,
Nettle in docke out, now this, now that, F

So in John Heywood's *Proverbs*—

"*In dock out nettle;*
Now in, now out; now here, now there;
Now merry; now high, now low; now ge

Sec. Gip. La gnambrol a tumbrel

Don. How? give me one word amongst you, that I may be doing too.

Aur. Yonder they are again! O guiltiness, Thou putt'st more trembling fear into a maid Than the first wedding-night. Take courage, wench, Thy face cannot betray thee with a blush now. [*Aside.*

Fath. Which way she took her flight, sir, none can guess,
Or how she 'scap'd.

Gov. Out at some window certainly.

Fath. O, 'tis a bold daring baggage!

Gov. See, good fortune, sir, 260
The gipsies! they're the cunning'st people living.

Fath. They cunning? what a confidence have you, sir!

No wise man's faith was ever set in fortunes.

Gov. You're the wilfull'st man against all learning still:

I will be hang'd now, if I hear not news of her
Amongst this company.

Fath. You are a gentleman of the flatt'ring'st hopes
That e'er lost woman yet.

Gov. Come hither, gipsy.

Aur. Luck now, or I'm undone. [*Aside.*—What says
my master?

Bless me with a silver cross,¹
And I will tell you all your loss.

270

¹ A silver coin marked with a cross.

Gov. Lo you there, sir! all my loss; at first word too:
There is no cunning in these gipsies now?

Fath. Sure I'll hear more of this.

Gov. Here's silver for you.

[*Gives money.*]

Aur. Now attend your fortune's story:
You lov'd a maid.

Gov. Right.

Aur. She ne'er lov'd you:
You shall find my words are true.

Gov. Mass, I am afraid so.

Aur. You were about
To keep her in, but could not do't:
Alas the while, she would not stay,
The cough o' th' lungs¹ blew her away!
And, which is worse, you'll be so crost,
You'll never find the thing that's lost;
Yet oftentimes your sight will fear her,
She'll be near you, and yet you ne'er the nearer:
Let her go, and be the gladder;
She'd but shame you, if you had her:
Ten counsellors could never school her;
She is so wild, you could not rule her.

280

Gov. In troth I'm of thy mind, yet I'd fain find her.

Aur. Soonest then when you least mind her;
But if you mean to take her tripping,
Make but haste, she's now a-shipping.

Gov. I ever dream'd so much.

¹ i.e. "the symptoms of age and infirmity in the lover proposed by the father."—Editor of 1816.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Duch. O good sir, spare me!

Car. Spare yourself, good madam;
Extremest justice is not so severe
To great offenders, as your own forc'd strictness
To beauty, youth, and time; you'll answer for't.

Duch. Sir, settle your own peace; let me make mine.

Car. But here's a heart must pity it, when it thinks
on't;

I find compassion, though the smart be yours.

First Lord. None here but does the like.

Sec. Lord. Believe it, madam,
You have much wrong'd your time.

10

First Lord. Nay, let your grace
But think upon the barrenness of succession.

Sec. Lord. Nay, more, a vow enforc'd.

Duch. What, do you all
Forsake me then, and take part with yon man?
Not one friend have I left? do they all fight
Under th' inglorious banner of his censure,¹
Serve under his opinion?

Car. So will all, madam,
Whose judgments can but taste a rightful cause;
I look for more force yet; nay, your own women
Will shortly rise against you, when they know
The war to be so just and honourable
As marriage is; you cannot name that woman
Will not come ready arm'd for such a cause:
Can chastity be any whit impair'd

20

¹ Judgment.

By that which makes it perfect? answer, madam;
 Do you profess constancy, and yet live alone?
 How can that hold? you're constant then to none;
 That's a dead virtue; goodness must have practice,
 Or else it ceases; then is woman said
 To be love-chaste, knowing but one man's bed; 30
 A mighty virtue! beside, fruitfulness
 Is part of the salvation of your sex;
 And the true use of wedlock's time and space
 Is woman's exercise for faith and grace.

Duch. O, what have you done, my lord!

Car. Laid the way plain
 To knowledge of yourself and your creation;
 Unbound a forcèd vow, that was but knit
 By the strange jealousy of your dying lord,
 Sinful i' th' fastening.

Duch. All the powers of constancy
 Will curse you for this deed!

Car. You speak in pain, madam, 40
 And so I take your words, like one in sickness
 That rails at his best friend: I know a change
 Of disposition has a violent working
 In all of us; 'tis fit it should have time
 And counsel with itself: may you be fruitful,
 madam,
 In all the blessings of an honour'd love!

First Lord. In all your wishes fortunate,—and I
 The chief of 'em, myself! [*Aside.*

Car. Peace be at your heart, lady!

First Lord. And love, say I. [*Asiae.*

Car. We'll leave good thoughts now to bring in themselves. [Exit with Lords. 50

Duch. O, there's no art like a religious cunning,
It carries away all things smooth before it !
How subtly has his wit dealt with the lords,
To fetch in their persuasions to a business
That stands in need of none, yields of itself,
As most we women do, when we seem farthest.
But little thinks the cardinal he's requited
After the same proportion of deceit
As he sets down for others.

Enter Page.

O, here's the pretty boy he preferr'd to me ; 60
I never saw a meeker, gentler youth,
Yet made for man's beginning ; how unfit
Was that poor fool to be Lactantio's page !
He would have spoil'd him quite ; in one year utterly ;
There had been no hope of him.—Come hither, child ;
I have forgot thy name.

Page. Antonio, madam.

Duch. Antonio ? so thou told'st me. I must chide thee ;

Why didst thou weep when thou cam'st first to serve me ?

Page. At the distrust of mine own merits, madam,
Knowing I was not born to those deserts 70
To please so great a mistress.

Duch. 'Las, poor boy,
That's nothing in thee but thy modest fear,

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Enter LACTANTIO with ANDRUGIO and Guard.

And. Not know the cause?

Lac. Yes, you shall soon do that now, to the ruin
Of your neck-part, or some nine years' imprisonment;
You meet with mercy, and you 'scape with that;
Beside your lands all begg'd and seiz'd upon;
That's admirable favour. Here's the duchess.

Duch. O sir, you're welcome!

Lac. Marry, bless me still 100
From such a welcome!

Duch. You are hard to come by,
It seems, sir, by the guilt of your long stay.

And. My guilt, good madam?

Duch. Sure y'had much ado
To take him, had you not? speak truth, Lactantio,
And leave all favour; were you not in danger?

Lac. Faith, something near it, madam: he grew head-
strong,
Furious and fierce; but 'tis not my condition¹
To speak the worst things of mine enemy, madam,
Therein I hold mine honour: but had fury
Burst into all the violent storms that ever 110
Play'd over anger in tempestuous man,
I would have brought him to your grace's presence,
Dead or alive.

Duch. You would not, sir?

And. What pride

¹ Disposition.

Of pamper'd blood has mounted up¹ this puck-foist?²
 If any way, uncounsell'd of my judgment,
 My ignorance has stept into some error,
 Which I could heartily curse, and so brought on me
 Your great displeasure, let me feel my sin
 In the full weight of justice, virtuous madam,
 And let it wake me throughly: but, chaste lady, 120
 Out of the bounty of your grace, permit not
 This perfum'd parcel of curl'd powder'd hair
 To cast me in the poor relish of his censure.³

Duch. It shall not need, good sir; we are ourself
 Of power sufficient to judge you; ne'er doubt it, sir.
 Withdraw, Lactantio; carefully place your guard
 I' the next room.

Lac. You will but fare the worse;
 You see your niceness spoils you; you'll go nigh now
 To feel your sin indeed. [*Exit LACTANTIO with Guard.*]

And. Hell-mouth be with thee!
 Was ever malice seen yet to gape wider 130
 For man's misfortunes?

Duch. First, sir, I should think
 You could not be so impudent to deny
 What your own knowledge proves to you.

And. That were a sin, madam,
 More gross than flattery spent upon a villain.

Duch. Your own confession dooms you, sir.

¹ Old ed. "up to."

² Fungus, puffball. It was frequently used (especially by Ben Jonson) as a term of contempt for an empty braggart.

³ Judgment.

And. Why, madam?

Duch. Do not you know I made a serious vow
At my lord's death, never to marry more?

And. That's a truth, madam, I'm a witness to.

Duch. Is't so, sir? you'll be taken presently.
This man needs no accuser. Knowing so much, 140
How durst you then attempt so bold a business
As to solicit me, so strictly settled,
With tempting letters and loose lines of love?

And. Who? I do't, madam?

Duch. Sure the man will shortly
Deny he lives, although he walks and breath[es.]

And. Better destruction snatch me quick from sight
Of human eyes, than I should sin so boldly!

Duch. 'Twas well I kept it then from rage or fire,
For my truth's credit. Look you, sir; read out;
You know the hand and name. [Gives letter.]

And. [reads.] *Andrugio!* 150

Duch. And if such things be fit, the world shall judge.

And. Madam——

Duch. Pish, that's not so; it begins otherwise;
Nay, look again, sir; how you'd slight your knowledge!

And. By all the reputation I late won——

Duch. Nay, and you dare not read, sir, I am gone.

And. Read? [reads] *Most fair duchess.*

Duch. O, have you found it now?

There's a sweet flattering phrase for a beginning!
You thought belike that would overcome me.

And. I, madam?

Duch. Nay, on, sir; you are slothful. 160

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

As the old time walk'd in, when love was simple
 And knew no art nor guile, I affect you ;
 My heart has made her choice ; I love you, sir,
 Above my vow : the frown that met you first 190
 Wore not the livery of anger, sir,
 But of deep policy ; I made your enemy
 The instrument for all ; there you may praise me,
 And 'twill not be ill given.

And. Here's a strange language !
 The constancy of love bless me from learning on't,
 Although ambition would soon teach it others ! [*Aside.*
 Madam, the service of whole life is yours ;
 But——

Duch. Enough ! thou'rt mine for ever.—Within, there !

Re-enter LACTANTIO *with* Guard.

Lac. Madam ?

Duch. Lay hands upon him ; bear him hence ; 200
 See he be kept close prisoner in our palace.—
 The time's not yet ripe for our nuptial solace.

[*Aside, and exit.*

Lac. This you could clear yourself !

And. There's a voice that wearies me
 More than mine own distractions.

Lac. You are innocent !

And. I've not a time idle enough from passion¹
 To give this devil an answer. O, she's lost !

¹ Grief.

Curs'd be that love by which a better's crost !
There my heart's settl'd.

[*Aside.*

Lac. How is he disgrac'd,
And I advanc'd in love ! faith, he that can
Wish more to his enemy is a spiteful man,
And worthy to be punish'd.

210

[*Exeunt.*

ACT V.

SCENE I.

An Apartment in the House of the Duchess.

Enter CELIA, Page, and CROTCHET.

Celia. Sir, I'm of that opinion ; being kept hard to't,
In troth I think he'll take his prick-song well.

Crot. [*sings.*] *G, sol, re, ut* ; you guess not right, i'faith.
Mistress, you'll find you're in an error straight.—
Come on, sir, lay the books down.—You shall see now.

Page. Would I'd an honest caudle next my heart !
Let who ¹ would *sol fa*, I'd give them my part.
In troth methinks I've a great longing in me
To bite a piece of the musician's nose off ;
But I'll rather 10
Lose my longing than spoil the poor man's singing :
The very tip will serve my turn, methinks,
If I could get it ; that he might well spare,
His nose is of the longest. O, my back ! [*Aside.*

¹ Old ed. "whose."

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Page. Never trust me
If I've not lost my wind with na
Crot. Come, boy, your mind's
now ;
Set to your song.

Page. Was ever wench so pun

Crot. [*sings.*] *Ut*,—come, begi

Page. [*sings.*] *Ut, mi, re, fa, so*

Crot. Keep time, you foolish !

[*E*

How like you this, madonna ?

Celia. Pretty ;

He will do well in time, being ke

Crot. I'll make his ears sore an

Celia. And that's the way to b

sir.

Crot. There's many now wax'd
Whom I have nipp'd i' th' ear, we
—Come, sing me over the last s
You're perfect in that sure ; look

¹ " Characters in old music—one large
two breves.—The editor of 1816 observes
have seen the name of the first note anyw
a very uncommon word ;

° But with a *large* and
To kepe iust playne-
Our chaunters shalbe
Skelton's /

² See note 2, p. 313.

Or here I'll notch your faults up. *Sol, sol* ; [sings] begin,
 boy. [Song. 50

Celia. So, you've done well, sir.

Here comes the dancing-master now ; you're discharg'd.

Enter SINGUAPACE.

Sing. O, signor Crotchet, O !

Crot. A minim rest,

Two cliffs, and a semibreve. In the name
 Of alamire,¹ what's the matter, sir ?

Sing. The horriest disaster that ever disgraced the
 lofty cunning of a dancer.

Crot. [sings.] *B, fa, b, mi*,—heaven forbid, man !

Sing. O—O—the most cruel fortune !

Crot. That semiquaver is no friend to you, 60
 That I must tell you ; 'tis not for a dancer
 To put his voice so hard to't ; every workman
 Must use his own tools, sir ;—*de, fa, sol*, [sings]—man,
 dilate

The matter to me.

Sing. Faith, riding upon my foot-cloth,² as I use to do,
 coming through a crowd, by chance I let fall my fiddle.

Crot. [sings.] *De, sol, re*.—your fiddle, sir ?

Sing. O, that such an instrument should be made to
 betray a poor gentleman ! nay, which is more lamentable,
 whose luck should it be to take up this unfortunate fiddle
 but a barber's prentice, who cried out presently, accord-

¹ "i.e., 'the lowest note but one in Guido Aretino's scale of music.'
 Todd's *Jahn. Dict.* in v."—*Dyce.*

² See note, vol iii. p. 297.

ing to his nature, *You trim gentlemen on horseback, you've lost your fiddle, your worship's fiddle!* seeing me upon my foot-cloth, the mannerly coxcomb could say no less; but away rid I, sir; put my horse to a coranto¹ pace, and left my fiddle behind me. 76

Crot. [*sings.*] *De, la, sol, re.*

Sing. Ay, was't not a strange fortune? an excellent treble-viol! by my troth, 'twas my master's when I was but a pumper, that is, a puller-on of gentlemen's pumps.

Crot. [*sings.*] *C, c, sol, fa,*—I knew you then, sir.

Sing. But I make no question but I shall hear on't shortly at one broker's or another; for I know the barber will scourse² it away for some old cittern.³

Crot. [*sings.*] *Ela, mi,*—my life for yours on that, sir: I must to my other scholars, my hour calls me away; I leave you to your practice—*fa, sol, la* [*sings*]—fare you well, sir. 87

Sing. The lavoltas⁴ of a merry heart be with you, sir [*exit* CROTCHET]; and a merry heart makes a good singing-man: a man may love to hear himself talk when he carries pith in's mouth.—

Meterenza⁵ Celia.

Celia. Signor Sinquapace,
The welcom'st gentleman alive of a dancer!

¹ *Coranto* was the name of a quick and lively dance.

² Exchange.

³ The favourite musical instrument of barbers.—See note 2, vol. ii. p. 61.

⁴ See note 2, vol. i. p. 44.

⁵ "A mistress. Probably meant as Italian; but only Frenchified Italian, made from *maltresse*."—*Nares*.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Celia. Nay, I know I shall do well, sir, and I am somewhat proud on't; but 'twas my mother's fault, when she danced with the duke of Florence. 121

Sing. Why, you will never dance well while you live,
If you be not proud. I know that by myself;
I may teach my heart out, if you've not the grace
To follow me.

Celia. I warrant you for that, sir.

Sing. Gentlewomen that are good scholars
Will come as near their masters as they can;
I've known some lie with 'em for their better understanding:

I speak not this to draw you on, forsooth;
Use your pleasure; if you come, you're welcome; 130
You shall see a fine lodging, a dish of comfits,
Music, and sweet linen.

Celia. And trust me, sir,
No woman can wish more in this world,
Unless it be ten pound in th' chamber-window,
Laid ready in good gold against she rises.

Sing. Those things are got in a morning, wench, with me.

Celia. Indeed, I hold the morning the best time of getting;
So says my sister; she's a lawyer's wife, sir,
And should know what belongs to cases best.
A fitter time for this; I must not talk 140
Too long of women's matters before boys.
He's very raw, you must take pains with him,

It is the duchess' mind it should be so ;
She loves him well, I tell you.

[*Exit.*

Sing. How, love him ?

He's too little for any woman's love i' th' town
By three handfuls : I wonder of a great woman
Sh'as no more wit, i'faith ; one of my pitch¹
Were somewhat tolerable.

Enter NICHOLAO with a viol.

O, are you come ?

Who would be thus plagu'd with a dandiprat usher !
How many kicks do you deserve in conscience ?

150

Nic. Your horse is safe, sir.

Sing. Now I talk'd of kicking,

'Twas well remember'd ; is not the foot-clôth stoln yet ?

Nic. More by good hap than any cunning, sir,
Would any gentleman but you get a tailor's son to walk
his horse, in this dear time of black velvet ?

Sing. Troth, thou sayst true ; thy care has got thy
pardon ;

I'll venture so no more.—Come, my young scholar,
I'm ready for you now.

Page. Alas, 'twill kill me !

I'm even as full of qualms as heart can bear :

How shall I do to hold up ? [*Aside.*—Alas, sir,

160

I can dance nothing but ill-favouredly,

A strain or two of passa-measures² galliard l

¹ Originally the height to which a falcon soared ; then height in general.

² A corruption of *passamesso*, the Italian name of a fashionable dance.

Sing. Marry, you're forwarder than I conceiv'd you ;
A toward stripling.—Enter him, Nicholao ;
For the fool's bashful, as they're all at first,
Till they be once well enter'd.

Nic. Passa-measures, sir ?

Sing. Ay, sir, I hope you hear me.—Mark him now,
boy.—

[NICHOLAO dances, while SINGUAPACE plays.

Ha, well done ! excellent boy !¹ dainty, fine springal !²
The glory of Dancers' Hall, if they had any !
And of all professions they'd most need of one, 170
For room to practise in, yet they have none.
O times ! O manners ! you have very little :
Why should the leaden-heel'd plumber have his hall,
And the light-footed dancer none at all ?
But *fortuna della guerra*,³ things must be ;
We're born to teach in back-houses and nooks,
Garrets sometimes, where't rains upon our books.—
Come on, sir ; are you ready ? first, your honour.⁴

Page. I'll wish no foe a greater cross upon her.

[*Aside*—then makes a curtsy.

Sing. Curtsy, heyday ! run to him, Nicholao ; 180
By this light, he'll shame me ; he makes curtsy like a
chambermaid.

"As a galliard consists of five paces or bars in the first strain, and is therefore called a cinque-pace ; the *passamezzo*, which is a diminutive of the galliard, is just half that number, and from that peculiarity takes its name."—Hawkins' *Hist. of Music*, iv. 386. See Nares' *Glossary*, s. PASSY-MEASURE and PAVAN.

¹ Old ed. "boys."

² Youth.—Old ed. "springals."

³ Old ed. "Fortune de la guardo."

⁴ i.e. make your obeisance.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

To knead their knees together. You can turn above ground, boy?

Page. Not I, sir; my turn's rather under ground.

Sing. We'll see what you can do; I love to try
What's in my scholars the first hour I teach them.
Show him a close trick now, Nicholao.

[NICHOLAO *dances while SINGUAPACE plays.*

Ha, dainty stripling!—Come, boy.

Page. 'Las, not I, sir;
I'm not for lofty tricks, indeed I am not, sir.

Sing. How? such another word, down goes your hose,
boy.

Page. Alas, 'tis time for me to do anything then!

[*Attempts to dance and falls down.*

Sing. Heyday, he's down!—Is this your lofty trick,
boy? 220

Nic. O master, the boy swoons; he's dead, I fear
me.

Sing. Dead? I ne'er knew one die with a lofty trick
before.—

Up, sirrah, up!

Page. A midwife! run for a midwife!

Sing. A midwife? by this light, the boy's with
child!

A miracle! some woman is the father.

The world's turn'd upside down: sure if men breed,

Women must get; one never could do both yet.—

No marvel you danc'd close-knee'd the sinquapace.—

Put up my fiddle, here's a stranger case.

[*Exit SINGUAPACE, leading out Page.*

Nic. That 'tis, I'll swear; 'twill make the duchess
wonder: 230

I fear me 'twill bring dancing out of request,
And hinder our profession for a time.

Your women that are closely got with child
Will put themselves clean out of exercise,
And will not venture now, for fear of meeting

Their shames in a coranto,¹ 'specially
If they be near their time. Well, in my knowledge,

If that should happen, we are sure to lose

Many a good waiting-woman that's now o'er shoes.²

Alas the while!

[*Exit.* 240

SCENE II.

Another Apartment in the House of the Duchess.

Enter Duchess and CELIA.

Duch. Thou tell'st me things are enemies to reason;
I cannot get my faith to entertain 'em,
And I hope never shall.

Celia. 'Tis too true, madam.

Duch. I say 'tis false: 'twere better th'hadst been
dumb

Than spoke a truth so unpleasing; thou shalt get

¹ See note 1, p. 462.

² "O'er shoes"—a sort of proverbial expression. Cf. Nashe's *Unfortunate Traveller* (*Works*, ed. Grosart, v. 22):—"That firm affiance, quoth I, had I in you before, or else I would never have gone so far over the shoes to pluck you out of the mire."

But little praise by't : he whom we affect
To place his love upon so base a creature !

Celia. Nay, ugliness itself ; you'd say so, madam,
If you but saw her once ; a strolling gipsy ;
No Christian that is born a hind could love her ; 10
She's the sun's masterpiece for tawniness ;
Yet have I seen Andrugio's arms about her,
Perceiv'd his hollow whisperings in her ear,
His joys at meeting her.

Duch. What joy could that be ?

Celia. Such, madam, I have seldom seen it equall'd ;
He kiss'd her with that greediness of affection,
As if her¹ lips had been as red as yours ;
I look'd still when he would be black in mouth,
Like boys with eating hedge-berries ; nay, more, madam,
He brib'd one of his keepers with ten ducats 20
To find her out amongst a flight of gipsies.

Duch. I'll have that keeper hang'd, and you for malice ;
She cannot be so bad as you report,
Whom he so firmly loves ; you're false in much,
And I will have you tried : go, fetch her to us.

[*Exit CELIA.*]

He cannot be himself, and appear guilty
Of such gross folly ; has an eye of judgment,
And that will overlook him. This wench fails
In understanding service ; she must home,
Live at her house i' th' country ; she decays 30
In beauty and discretion.—

¹ Old ed. "his."

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

And that's so gross, it may be felt.—Here, Celia,
 Take this [*giving signet-ring*]; with speed command
 Andrugio to us,
 And his guard from him.

Celia. It shall straight be done, madam. [*Exit.*]

Duch. I'll look into his carriage more judiciously
 When I next get him. A wrong done to beauty 60
 Is greater than an injury done to love,
 And we'll less pardon it; for had it been
 A creature whose perfection had outshin'd me,
 It had been honourable judgment in him,
 And to my peace a noble satisfaction;
 But as it is, 'tis monstrous above folly.
 Look he be mad indeed, and throughly gone,
 Or he pays dearly for it; it is not
 The ordinary madness of a gentleman
 That shall excuse him here; had better lose 70
 His wits eternally than lose my grace:
 So strange is the condition of his fall,
 He's safe in nothing but in loss of all.
 He comes:

Enter ANDRUGIO with CELIA.

Now by the fruits of all my hopes,
 A man that has his wits cannot look better!
 It likes¹ me well enough; there's life in's eye,
 And civil health in's cheek; he stands with judgment.

¹ Pleases.

And bears his body well. What ails this man?
 Sure I durst venture him 'mongst a thousand ladies,
 Let 'em shoot all their scoffs, which makes none laugh so
 But their own waiting-women, and they dare do no other-
 wise. [*Aside.*

Come nearer, sir: I pray keep further off,
 Now I remember you.

And. What new trick's in this now? [*Aside.*

Duch. How long have you been mad, sir?

And. Mad? a great time, lady;
 Since I first knew I should not sin, yet sinn'd;
 That's now some thirty years, byrlady, upwards.

Duch. This man speaks reason wondrous feelingly,
 Enough to teach the rudest soul good manners. [*Aside.*
 You cannot be excus'd with lightness now,
 Or frantic fits; you're able to instruct, sir, 90
 And be a light to men. If you have errors,
 They be not ignorant in you, but wilful,
 And in that state I seize on 'em. Did I
 Bring thee acquainted lately with my heart,
 And when thou thought'st a storm of anger took thee,
 It in a moment clear'd up all to love,
 To the abusing of thy spiteful enemy,
 That sought to fix his malice upon thee;
 And couldst thou so requite me?

And. How, good madam?

Duch. To wrong all worth in man, to deal so basely
 Upon contempt itself, disdain and loathsomeness; 101
 A thing whose face, through ugliness, frights children,
 A stragging gipsy!

And. See how you may err, madam,
Through wrongful information ; by my hopes
Of truth and mercy, there is no such love
Bestow'd upon a creature so unworthy.

Duch. No ! then you cannot fly me.—Fetch her back.

[*Exit CELIA.*]

And though the sight of her displeas mine eye
Worse than th' offensiv'st object earth and nature
Can present to us, yet for truth's probation
We will endure't contentfully. 110

Re-enter CELIA with AURELIA in her own dress.

What now ?

Art thou return'd without her ?

And. No, madam ; this is she my peace dwells in :
If here be either baseness of descent,
Rudeness of manners, or deformity
In face or fashion, I have lost, I'll yield it ;
Tax me severely, madam.

Duch. [*to CELIA.*] How thou stand'st,
As dumb as the salt-pillar ! where's this gipsy ?

[*CELIA points to AURELIA.*]

What, no ? I cannot blame thee then for silence ;
Now I'm confounded too, and take part with thee. 120

Aur. Your pardon and your pity, virtuous madam :

[*Kneels.*]

Cruel restraint, join'd with the power of love,
Taught me that art ; in that disguise I 'scap'd
The hardness of my fortunes ; you that see
What love's force is, good madam, pity me !

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page



HISTORY

Tens of thousands of important historical sources, many previously unobtainable, are now available for the first time with a Forgotten Books Full Membership.

Unlimited Access
\$8.99/month

Continue

*Fair usage policy applies

Lac. Yes, for some waiting-vessel ; but the times
 Are chang'd with me, if y'had the grace to know 'em ;
 I look'd for more respect ; I am not spoke withal
 After this rate, I tell you ; learn hereafter 150
 To know what belongs to me ; you shall see
 All the court teach you shortly. Farewell, manners.

Duch. I'll mark the event of this. [*Aside.*

Aur. I have undone myself
 Two ways at once ; lost a great deal of time,
 And now I'm like to lose more. O my fortune !
 I was nineteen yesterday, and partly vow'd
 To have a child by' twenty, if not twain :
 To see how maids are cross'd ! but I'm plagu'd justly ;
 And she that makes a fool of her first love,
 Let her ne'er look to prosper. [*Aside.*]
 —Sir—

[*To ANDRUGIO.*

And. O falsehood ! 160

Aur. Have you forgiveness in you ? there's more
 hope of me
 Than of a maid that never yet offended.

And. Make me your property ?¹

Aur. I'll promise you
 I'll never make you worse ; and, sir, you know
 There are worse things for women to make men.
 But, by my hope of children, and all lawful,

¹ *i.e.* a person at your disposal, to be subjected to any treatment that you may think fit. Cf. *Julius Caesar*, iv. 1 :—

" Do not talk of him
 But as a property."

I'll be as true for ever to your bed
As she in thought or deed that never err'd.

And. I'll once believe a woman, be't but to strengthen
Weak faith in other men : I have a love 170
That covers all thy faults.

Enter Cardinal and Lords.

Car. Nephew, prepare thyself
With meekness and thanksgiving to receive
Thy reverend fortune : amongst all the lords,
Her close affection now makes choice of thee.

Lac. Alas, I'm not to learn to know that now !
Where could she make choice here, if I were missing ?
'Twould trouble the whole state, and puzzle 'em all,
To find out such another.

Car. 'Tis high time, madam,
If your grace please, to make election now :
Behold, they're all assembled.

Duch. What election ? 180
You speak things strange to me, sir.

Car. How, good madam ?

Duch. Give me your meaning plainly, like a father ;
You're too religious, sir, to deal in riddles.

Car. Is there a plainer way than leads to marriage,
madam,
And the man set before you ?

Duch. O blasphemy
To sanctimonious faith ! comes it from you, sir ?
An ill example ! know you what you speak,

Or who you are? is not my vow in place?
 How dare you be so bold, sir? Say a woman
 Were tempt with a temptation, must you presently 190
 Take all th' advantage on't?

Car. Is this in earnest, madam?

Duch. Heaven pardon you! if you do not think so,
 sir;

You've much to answer for; but I will leave you;
 Return I humbly now from whence I fell.
 All you bless'd powers that register the vows
 Of virgins and chaste matrons, look on me
 With eyes of mercy, seal forgiveness to me
 By signs of inward peace! and to be surer
 That I will never fail your good hopes of me,
 I bind myself more strictly; all my riches 200
 I'll speedily commend to holy uses,
 This temple¹ unto some religious sanctuary,
 Where all my time to come I will allow
 For fruitful thoughts; so knit I up my vow.

Lac. This ['t]is to hawk at eagles: pox of pride!
 It lays a man i' th' mire still, like a jade
 That has too many tricks, and ne'er a good one.
 I must gape high! I'm in a sweet case now!
 I was sure of one, and now I've lost her too. [Aside]

Duch. I know, my lord, all that great studious care
 Is for your kinsman; he's provided for 211
 According to his merits.

¹ "By 'this temple' is meant her person: the expression is taken from Scripture, but is rather too solemn for the occasion."—Editor of 1816.

THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

SAVE \$3,999,994

Did you know we sell
paperback books too?

To buy our entire catalog
in paperback would cost
over \$4,000,000

Access it all now for
\$8.99/month

*Fair usage policy applies

Continue

Duch. Nay, my lord,
 At our request, since we are pleas'd to pardon,
 And send remission to all former errors,
 Which conscionable justice now sets right,
 From you we expect patience; has had punishment 240
 Enough in his false hopes; trust me he has, sir;
 They have requited his dissembling largely:
 And to erect your falling goodness to him,
 We'll begin first ourself; ten thousand ducats
 The gentlewoman shall bring out of our treasure
 To make her dowry.

Car. None has the true way
 Of overcoming anger with meek virtue,
 Like your compassionate grace. 248

Lac. Curse of this fortune! this 'tis to meddle with
 taking stuff, whose belly cannot be confined in a waist-
 band. [*Aside.*]— Pray, what have you done with the
 breeches? we shall have need of 'em shortly, and we get
 children so fast; they are too good to be cast away. My
 son and heir need not scorn to wear what his mother has
 left off. I had my fortune told me by a gipsy seven years
 ago; she said then I should be the spoil of many a maid,
 and at seven years' end marry a quean for my labour,
 which falls out wicked and true.

Duch. We all have faults; look not so much on his:
 Who lives i' th' world that never did amiss?— 260
 For you, Aurelia, I commend your choice,
 You've one after our heart; and though your father
 Be not in presence we'll assure his voice;
 Doubt not his liking, his o'erjoying rather.—

You, sir, embrace your own, 'tis your full due ;
No page serves me more that once dwells with you.
O, they that search out man's intents shall find
There's more dissemblers than of womankind.¹

[*Exeunt omnes.*]

¹ Old ed. "womenkind."

END OF VOL. VI.